NEW-ENGLANDS MEMORIALL:

OR,

A brief Relation of the moſt Memorable and Remarkable Paſſages of the Providence of God, manifeſted to the

PLANTERS

OF

New-England in America;

With ſpecial Reference to the firſt Colony thereof, Called

NEW-PLIMOUTH.

As alſo a Nomination of divers of the moſt Eminent Inſtruments deceaſed, both of Church and Common-wealth, improved in the firſt beginning and after-progreſs of ſundry of the reſpective Juriſdictions in thoſe Parts; in reference unto ſundry Exemplary Paſſages of their LIVES, and the time of their DEATH.

Publiſhed for the Uſe and Benefit of preſent and future Generations,

By *NATHANIEL MORTON*,

Secretary to the Court for the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*.

Deut. 32. 10. *He found him in a deſert Land, in the waſte howling wilderneſs he led him about; he inſtructed him, he kept him as the Apple of his Eye.*

Jerem. 2. 2, 3. *I remember thee, the kindneſs of thy youth, the love of thine Eſpouſals, when thou wenteſt after me in the wilderneſs, in a Land that was not ſown,* &c.

Deut. 8. 2, 16. *And thou ſhalt remember all the way which the Lord thy God led thee this* FORTY YEARS *in the wilderneſs.* &c.

CAMBRIDGE:

Printed by *S. G.* and *M. J.* for *John Uſher* of *Boſton*. 1669.

To the Reader.

IT is much to be desired there might be extant *A Compleat History of the United Colonies of New-England*, that God may have the praise of his goodness to his People here, and that the present and future Generations may have the benefit thereof. This being not attainable for the present, nor suddenly to be expected, it is very expedient, that (while sundry of the Eldest Planters are yet living) *Records* and *Memorials of Remarkable Providences* be preserved and published, that the true Originals of these Plantations may not be lost; that *New-England*, in all time to come, may remember the day of her smallest things; and that there may be a furniture of *Materials* for a true and full History in after-times.

For these and such-like Reasons we are willing to Recommend unto the Reader this present *Narrative* as a Useful Piece. The Author is an approved godly man, and one of the first Planters at *Plimouth*; The Work it-self is Compiled with Modesty of Spirit, Simplicity of Style, and Truth of Matter, containing the *Annals* of *New-England* for the space of 47 years, with special reference to *Plimouth* Colony, which was the first, and where the Author hath had his constant abode: And yet (so farre as his Intelligence did reach) relating many Remarkable Passages in the several Colonies; and also making an honourable mention of divers of the most Eminent Servants of God that have been amongst us in several parts of the Country, after they had finished their course. We hope that the Labor of this good man will finde a general Acceptance amongst the People of God, and also be a means to provoke some or other in the rest of the Colonies (who have had the knowledge of things from the beginning) to Contribute their *Observations* and *Memorials* also; by which means, what is wanting in this *Narrative*, may be supplied by some others: and so in the issue, from divers *Memorials* there may be matter for a just *History* of *New-England* in the Lords good time. In the mean time, this may stand for a *Monument*, and be deservedly acknowledged as an *Eben-Ezer*, that *Hitherto the Lord hath helped us.*

March 26. 1669.

John Higginson.
Thomas Thacher.

To the Right Worſhipful,

THOMAS PRINCE Eſq;

Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*;

With the Worſhipfull, the

MAGISTRATES,

His Aſſiſtants in the ſaid Government:

N. M. *wiſheth Peace and Proſperity in this Life, and Eternall Happineſs in that which is to come.*

Right Worſhipfull,

THe conſideration of the weight of Duty that lieth upon us, to Commemorize to future Generations the memorable paſſages of Gods Providence to us and our Predeceſſors in the beginning of this Plantation, hath wrought in me a reſtleſneſs of ſpirit, and earneſt deſire, that ſomething might be atchieved in that behalf, more (or at leaſt otherwiſe) then as yet hath been done. Many diſcouragements I have met with, both from within and without my ſelf: but reflecting upon the *Ends* I have propoſed to my ſelf in ſetting out in this Work, it hath afforded me ſome ſupport, *viz. The*

glory of God, and the good of preſent and future Generations. Being alſo induced hereunto, by the conſideration that your ſelves (eſpecially ſome of you) are fully acquainted with many of the particulars, both concerning *Perſons* and *Things*, inſerted in the following Narrative, and can on your own knowledge aſſert them for Truth. Were it ſo that any other had travelled in this kinde, in ſuch a way as might have conduced to a brief and ſatisfactory intelligence in particulars relating to the premiſes, I would have ſpared this labour, and have ſatisfied my ſelf in peruſal of their Works, rather then to have ſet pen to paper about the ſame; but having neither ſeen nor heard of any, eſpecially reſpecting this our Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, which God hath honoured to be the firſt in this Land, I have made bold to preſent your Worſhips with, and to publiſh to the world ſomething of the very *firſt Beginnings* of the great Actings of God in *New-England*, begun at *New-Plimouth*: wherein, the greateſt part of my intelligence hath been borrowed from my much honoured Uncle, Mr. *William Bradford*, and ſuch Manuſcripts as he left in his Study, from the year 1620, unto 1646; whom had God continued in this world ſome longer time, and given him reſt from his other more important Affairs, we might probably have had theſe things from an abler Pen, and better digeſted, then now you may expect. Certain *Diurnals* of the honoured Mr. *Edward Winſlow*, have alſo afforded me good light and help: and what from them both, and otherwiſe I have obtained, that I judged ſuitable for the following Diſcourſe, I have with care and faithfulneſs related; and have therein more

ſollici-

ſollicitouſly followed the truth of things (many of which I can alſo aſſert on my own knowledge) then I have ſtudied quaintneſs in expreſſions.

I ſhould gladly have ſpoken more particularly of the Neighbouring *United Colonies*, whoſe ends and aims in their Tranſplanting of themſelves and Families, were the ſame with ours, viz. *The glory of God, the propagation of the Goſpel, and enlargement of His Majeſties Dominions*; but for want of intelligence, and that I may not prevent a better Pen, I ſhall onely make mention of ſome of their Worthies that we have been moſt acquainted with.

I ſhall not inſiſt upon the Clime nor Soyle of the Country, its Commodities or Diſcommodities; nor at large on the Natives, or their Cuſtomes and Manners: all which have been already declared by Captain *Smith*, Mr. *Higginſon*, Mr. *Williams*, Mr. *Wood*, and others. What it is, and what my aims at Gods glory, and my good affections to the place and people of whom I treat, may make it, I preſent your Worſhips with; Humbly craving your favourable aſpect, and good acceptance of my poor Endeavours; and that my ſelf and it may finde protection and ſhelter under the wings of your pious Patronage, to defend us againſt ſuch criticall and cenſorious eyes and tongues, as may either carp at my expreſsions, or miſconſtrue my intentions. The ample experience I have had of your undeſerved Favour and Reſpect to me, in my many years Service of the *Publick*, and my obſervation in that time, that you have deſired ſomething of this nature might be done, hath encouraged me hereunto: your good acceptance whereof, ſhall ever oblige me to anſwerable returning of gratitude,

tude, and administer to me further cause of thankfulness, That God hath given me an Habitation under your just and prudent Administrations; and wish for a Succession of such as may be skilfull to lead our *Israel* in this their peregrination; and when God shall take you hence, to receive the Crown of your labours and travels. So prayeth,

Your Worships humble Servant,

Nathaniel Morton.

TO

TO THE CHRISTIAN Reader:

Grace and Peace be multiplied: With Profit by this following Narration.

Gentle Reader,

I *Have for some length of time looked upon it as a duty incumbent, especially on the immediate Successors of those that have had so large Experience of those many memorable and signall Demonstrations of Gods goodness,* viz. *The first Beginners of this Plantation in* New-England, *to commit to writing his gracious dispensations on that behalf, having so many inducements thereunto, not onely otherwise, but so plentifully in the Sacred Scriptures: That so,* what we have seen, and what our fathers have told us, we may not hide from our children, shewing to the generations to come the praises of the Lord, *that especially* the seed of *Abraham* his servant, and the children of *Jacob* his chosen, may remember his marvellous works *in the beginning and progress of the planting of*

Psal. 78. 3. 4.

Psal. 105. 8, 9.

New-England, his wonders, and the judgements of his
Psal. 80. 8, 9. mouth: *How that* God brought a vine into this Wilderness, *that* he cast out the Heathen and planted it; *that* he made room for it, and caused it to take deep root, and it filled the Land; *so that* it hath sent forth its boughs to the Sea, and its branches to the River. *And*
Exod. 15. 13. *not onely so, but also that* He hath guided his people by his strength to his holy Habitation, *and planted them in the* Mountain of his Inheritance, *in respect of precious Gospel-Enjoyments. So that we may not onely look back to*
Psal. 66. 6. *former Experiences of Gods goodness to our Predecessors, (though many years before) and so have our faith strengthned in the Mercies of God for our times; that so the Church being one* Numerical Body, *might not onely even for the*
Hosea 12. 4. *time* he spake with us *in our Forefathers, by many gracious manifestations of his glorious Attributes,* Wisdome, Goodness, *and* Truth, *improved for their good: but also rejoyce in present Enjoyments of both outward and spirituall mercies, as fruits of their Prayers, Tears, Travels and Labours. That as especially God may have the glory of all, unto whom it is most due; so also some rayes of glory may reach the* Names *of those blessed Saints that were the main Instruments of the beginning of this* happy Enterprize.

So then, gentle Reader, *thou mayest take notice, that the main Ends of publishing this small* History, *is,* That God may have his due praise, His Servants the Instruments have their Names embalmed, and the present and future Ages may have the fruit and benefit of Gods great work, in the Relation of the first Planting of *New-England. Which Ends, if attained, will be great cause of rejoycing to the Publisher thereof, if God gives him*

life,

life, and opportunity to take notice thereof.

The Method *I have observed, is (as I could) in some measure answerable to the ends forenamed, in inserting some Acknowledgements of Gods* Goodnesse, Faithfulnesse, *and* Truth *upon special occasions, with allusion to the Scriptures; and also taking notice of some special Instruments, and such main and special Particulars as were perspicuously remarkable, in way of Commendation in them, so farre as my intelligence would reach; and especially in a faithful Commemorizing, and declaration of Gods wonderful works for, by, and to his people, in preparing a place for them, by driving out the Heathen before them; bringing them through a a Sea of Troubles; preserving and protecting them from, and in those dangers that attended them in their low estate, when they were strangers in the Land; and making this howling Wildernesse a Chamber of rest, safety, and pleasantnesse, whiles the storms of his Displeasure have not onely tossed, but endangered the overwhelming of great* States *and* Kingdomes, *and hath now made it to us a fruitful Land, sowed it with the seed of man and beast; but especially in giving us so long a peace, together with the Gospel of peace, and so great a freedome in our Civil and Religious Enjoyments; and also in giving us hopes that we may be Instruments in his hands, not onely of enlarging of our Princes Dominions, but to enlarge the Kingdome of the Lord Jesus, in the Conversion of the poor blinde* Natives.

And now, Courteous Reader, *that I may not hold thee too long in the Porch, I onely crave of thee to reade this following Discourse with a single eye, and with the same ends as I had in penning it. Let not the smallnesse of our* Beginnings, *nor weakenes of* Instruments, *make the thing*

seem

seem little, or the work despicable; but on the contrary, let the greater praise be rendred unto God, who hath effected great things *by* small means. *Let not the homelyness of my style, prejudice thy taste or appetite to the dish I present thee with: Accept it as freely as I give it thee. Carp not at what thou dost not approve, but use it as a Remembrance of the Lords goodness, to engage to true Thankfulness and Obedience; so may it be a help to thee in thy journey through the wilderness of this world, to that Eternal Rest which is onely to be found in the Heavenly* Canaan: *which is the earnest desire of*

Thy Christian Friend,

Nathaniel Morton.

NEW-ENGLAND'S MEMORIAL:

OR,

A brief Relation of the most Remarkable Passages of the Providence of God manifested to the Planters of *New-England* in *AMERICA*.

And first, of the beginning of the first Plantation in *N.E.* CALLED

NEW-PLIMOUTH.

IT is the usuall manner of the Dispensation of the Majesty of Heaven, to work wonderfully by weak means for the effectuating of great things, to the intent that he may have the more Glory to himself: Many instances hereof might be produced, both out of the Sacred Scriptures, and common Experience; and amongst many others of this kinde, the late Happy and Memorable Enterprize of the Planting of that part of *America* called *New-England*, deserveth to be Commemorized to future Posterity.

IN the Year 1602. divers godly Christians of our English Nation in the North of *England*, being studious of Reformation, and therefore not onely witnessing against Humane Inventions, and Additions in the Worship of God, but minding most the positive and practical part of Divine Institutions, they entred into Covenant, To walk with God, and one with another, in the enjoyment of the Ordinances of God, according

to the Primitive Patern in the Word of God. But finding by experience they could not peaceably enjoy their own liberty in their Native Country, without offence to others that were differently minded; they took up thoughts of removing themselves and their Families into the *Netherlands*, which accordingly they endeavoured to accomplish, but met with great hinderance; yet after some time, the good hand of God removing obstructions, they obtained their desires; arriving in *Holland*, they setled themselves in the City of *Leyden*, in the year 1610, and there they continued divers years in a comfortable condition, enjoying much sweet society and spiritual comfort in the wayes of God, living peaceably among themselves, and being courteously entertained, and lovingly respected by the *Dutch*, amongst whom they were strangers, having for their Pastor Mr. *John Robinson*, a man of a learned, polished, and modest spirit, pious and studious of the Truth, largely accomplished with suitable Gifts and Qualifications to be a Shepherd over this Flock of Christ; having also a fellow-helper with him in the Eldership, Mr. *William Brewster*, a man of approved Piety, Gravity, and Integrity, very eminently furnished with gifts suitable to such an Office.

But notwithstanding their amiable and comfortable carrying on, (as hath been said) although the Church of Christ on Earth in holy Writ, is sometimes called *Heaven*, yet there is alwayes in their most perfect state here in this lower world, very much wanting as to absolute and perfect happiness, which is only reserved for the time and place of the full enjoyment of Celestial Glory: for, although this Church was at peace, and in rest at this time, yet they took up thoughts of removing themselves into *America* with common consent; the Proposition of removing thither being set on foot, and prosecuted by the Elders upon just and weighty grounds: for, although they did quietly and sweetly enjoy their Church-liberties under the *States*, yet they foresaw that *Holland* would be no place for their Church and Posterity to continue in comfortably, at least in that measure that they hoped to finde abroad; and

that for these Reasons following, which I shall recite as received from themselves.

First, Because themselves were of a different Language from the *Dutch*, where they lived, and were setled in their way, insomuch that in ten years time, whiles their Church sojourned amongst them, they could not bring them to reform the neglect of Observation of the Lords-day as a Sabbath, or any other thing amiss amongst them.

Secondly, Because their Countrymen, who came over to joyn with them, by reason of the hardness of the Country, soon spent their Estates, and were then forced either to return back to *England*, or to live very meanly.

Thirdly, That many of their Children, through the extreme necessity that was upon them, although of the best dispositions, and graciously inclined, and willing to bear part of their Parents burthens, were oftentimes so oppressed with their heavy labours, that although their Spirits were free and willing, yet their Bodies bowed under the weight of the same, and became decrepid in their early youth, and the vigour of Nature consumed in the very bud. And that which was very lamentable, and of all sorrows most heavy to be born, was, that many by these occasions, and the great licentiousness of Youth in that Country, and the manifold temptations of the place, were drawn away by evil examples into extravagant and dangerous courses, getting the reins on their necks, and departing from their Parents: Some became Souldiers, others took upon them fare Voyages by Sea, and other some worse courses tending to dissolutenes, and the destruction of their Souls, to the great grief of their Parents, and the dishonour of God; and that the place being a place of great licentiousness, and liberty to Children, they could not educate them, nor could they give them due correction without reproof or reproach from their Neighbours.

Fourthly, That their Posterity would in few generations become *Dutch*, and so lose their interest in the *English* Nation, they being desirous rather to enlarge His Majesties Dominions,

and to live under their Naturall PRINCE.

This hath been graciously answered since, by moving the hearts of many of his Servants to be very instrumental in this work, with some good success, & hopes of a further blessing in that respect.

Fifthly and lastly, and which was not the least, a great hope and inward Zeal they had of laying some good Foundation, or at least to make some way thereunto, for the propagating and advancement of the Gospel of the Kingdome of Christ in those remote parts of the World, yea although they should be but as stepping-stones unto others for the performance of so great a Work.

These and such like were the true Reasons of their removal, and not as some of their Adversaries did upon the rumour thereof, cast out slanders against them; as if the *State* was weary of them, and had rather driven them out, (as Heathen Histories have feigned of *Moses* and the *Israelites*, when they went out of *Egypt*) then that it was their own free choice and motion.

I will therefore mention a particular or two, to evince the contrary.

And first, Although some of them were low in their Estates, yet the *Dutch* observing that they were diligent, faithful and careful of their engagements, had great respect to them, and strove for their custome.

Again, secondly, the Magistrates of the City of *Leyden* where they lived, about the time of their coming away, in the publick place of Justice gave this commendable Testimony of them, in reproof of the *Walloons* who were of the *French* Church in the City; *These English* (said they) *have lived now amongst us Twelve years, and yet we never had any Suit or Accusation against them, or any of them; but your Strifes and Quarrels are continuall.*

The Reasons of their Removal above-named being debated first in private, and thought weighty, were afterwards propounded in publick; and after solemn dayes of Humiliation observed both in publick and in private, it was agreed, That part of the Church should go before their Brethren into *America*, to prepare for the rest: and if in case the major part of the

the Church did chuſe to go over with the firſt, then the Paſtor to go along with them; but if the major part ſtayed, that he was then to ſtay with them.

They having imployed ſundry Agents to treat with ſeveral Merchants in *England*, who adventured ſome conſiderable Sums in a way of valuation to ſuch as went perſonally on in the Voyage; the Articles of Agreement about the premiſes being fully concluded with the ſaid Merchants, and ſundry Difficulties and Obſtructions removed, having alſo obtained *Letters Patents* for the Northern parts of *Virginia*, of King *James* of Famous Memory; All things were got ready and provided, a ſmall Ship was bought and fitted out in *Holland*, of about ſixty Tun, called *The Speedwell*, as to ſerve to tranſport ſome of them over, ſo alſo to ſtay in the Country, and attend upon Fiſhing, and ſuch other affairs as might be for the good and benefit of the Colony when they came thither. Another Ship was hired at *London*, of Burthen about Nineſcore, called *The May-flower*, and all other things got in a readineſs: ſo being prepared to depart, they had a ſolemn day of Humiliation, the Paſtor teaching a part of the day very profitably and ſuitably to the preſent occaſion, the reſt of the time was ſpent in pouring out of Prayers unto the Lord with great fervency, mixed with abundance of tears; and the time being come that they muſt depart, they were accompanied with moſt of their Brethren out of the City, unto a Town called *Delfs Haven*, where the Ship lay ready to receive them: ſo they left that goodly and pleaſant City, which had been their reſting place above eleven years; but they knew that they were *Pilgrims and Strangers* here below, and looked not much on theſe things, but lifted up their eyes to Heaven, their deareſt Country, where *God hath prepared for them a City*, and therein quieted their ſpirits.

The Text of Scripture was Ezra 8.21.

Hebr. 11.16.

When they came to the place, they found the Ship and all things ready; and ſuch of their Friends as could not come with them, followed after them, and ſundry came from *Amſterdam* to ſee them ſhipt, and to take their leaves of them.

One night was ſpent with little ſleep with the moſt, but with friendly entertainment, and Chriſtian diſcourſe, and other reall expreſſions of true Chriſtian love. The next day the wind being fair they went on Board, and their friends with them, where truely-doleful was the ſight of that ſad and mournful parting, to hear what ſighs and ſobs and prayers did ſound amongſt them; what tears did guſh from every eye, and pithy ſpeeches pierced each others heart, that ſundry of the *Dutch* ſtrangers that ſtood on the Key as ſpectators, could not refrain from tears: yet comfortable and ſweet it was, to ſee ſuch lively and true expreſſions of dear and unfeigned love. But the Tide (which ſtayes for no man) calling them away, that were thus loth to depart, their Reverend Paſtor falling down on his knees, and they all with him, with watery cheeks commended them with moſt fervent Prayers unto the Lord and his bleſſing; and then with mutual imbraces, and many tears, they took their leaves one of another, which proved to be the *laſt leave* to many of them. Thus hoyſing Sail with a proſperous gale of wind, they came in ſhort time to *Southampton*, where they found the bigger Ship come from *London*, being ready with all the reſt of their Company, meeting each other with a joyful welcome and mutual congratulation.

This was about the ſecond of July 1620.

At their parting, their Paſtor Mr. *John Robinſon* wrote a Letter to the whole Company, which I thought meet here to inſert, being ſo fruitfull in it ſelf, and ſutable to their occaſions.

Loving Chriſtian Friends,

I *Do heartily, and in the Lord ſalute you, as being thoſe with whom I am preſent in my beſt affections, and moſt earneſt longings after you, though I be conſtrained for a while to be bodily abſent from you: I ſay, Conſtrained; God knowing how willingly, and much rather than otherwiſe, I would have born my part with you in this firſt brunt, were I not by ſtrong neceſſity held back for the preſent. Make account of me in the mean time as a man divided in my ſelf, with great pain, (and as Natural bonds ſet aſide)*

aside) having my better part with you: And although I doubt not but in your godly wisdomes you both foresee and resolve upon that which concerneth your present state and condition, both severally and joyntly; yet have I thought it but my duty to adde some further spur of provocation unto them who run already, if not because you need it, yet because I owe it in love and duty. And first, as we are daily to renew our Repentance with our God, especially for our sins known, and generally for our unknown trespasses: so doth the Lord call us in a singular manner, upon occasions of such difficulty and danger as lieth upon you, to a both narrow search, and carefull reformation of your wayes in his sight, lest he calling to remembrance our sins forgotten by us, or unrepented of, take advantage against us, and in judgement leave us to be swallowed up in one danger or other: whereas on the contrary, sin being taken away by earnest Repentance, and the pardon thereof from the Lord sealed up to a mans Conscience by his Spirit, great shall be his security and peace in all dangers, sweet his comforts in all distresses, with happy deliverance from all evil, whether in life or death. Now next after this heavenly peace with God and our own Consciences, we are carefully to provide for peace with all men, what in us lyeth, especially with our Associates; and for that, watchfulness must be had that we neither at all in our selves do give, no nor easily take offence being given by others. Woe be to the world for offences, for although it be necessary, considering the malice of Satan and mans corruption, that offences come, yet woe unto the man, or woman either, by whom the offence cometh, saith Christ, Matth. 18.7. and if offences in the unseasonable use of things in themselves indifferent, be more to be feared then death it self, as the Apostle teacheth, 1 Cor. 9. 15. how much more in things simply evil, in which neither honour of God nor love of man is thought worthy to be regarded? Neither yet is it sufficient that we keep our selves by the grace of God from giving of offence, except withall we be armed against the taking of them when they are given by others: for how imperfect and lame is the work of Grace in that person, who wants Charity to cover a multitude of offences? as the Scripture speaks. Neither are you to be exhorted to this grace,

only

onely upon the common grounds of Christianity, which are, that persons ready to take offence, either want Charity to cover offences, or Wisdome duely to weigh humane frailties; or lastly, are grosse though close Hypocrites, as Christ our Lord teacheth, Mat. 7. 1, 2, 3. *as indeed, in my own experience few or none have been found which sooner give offence, then such as easily take it; neither have they ever proved sound and profitable Members in Societies, who have nourished this* touchy humour. *But besides these, there are divers Motives provoking you above others to great care and conscience this way; as first, there are many of you strangers as to the persons, so to the infirmities one of another, and so stand in need of more watchfulnes this way, lest when such things fall out in men and women as you expected not, you be inordinately affected with them, which doth require at your hands much Wisdome and Charity for the covering and preventing of incident offences that way. And lastly, your intended course of Civil Community, will minister continuall occasion of offence, and will be as fewel for that fire, except you diligently quench it with* brotherly forbearance: *and if taking of offence causlesly or easily at mens doings, be so carefully to be avoided; how much more heed is to be taken that we take not offence at God himself? which yet we certainly do, so oft as we do murmure at his Providence in our crosses, or bear impatiently such afflictions as wherewith he is pleased to visit us. Store up therefore Patience against the evil day, without which, we take offence at the Lord himself in his holy and just works. A fourth thing there is carefully to be provided for; viz. That with your common Implyments, you joyn common Affections truely bent upon the generall Good, avoiding as a deadly Plague of your both Common and Special Comforts, all retiredness of minde for proper advantage; and all singularly affected every manner of way, let every man repress in himself, and the whole Body in each person, as so many Rebels against the Common Good, all* private respects of mens selves, *not sorting with the generall Convenience. And as men are careful not to have a new House shaken with any violence, before it be well settled, and the parts firmly knit: so be you, I beseech you Brethren, much more carefull that the House of God*

(which

(which you are, and are to be) be not taken with unneceſſary Novelties, or other Oppoſitions at the firſt ſetling thereof.

Laſtly, Whereas you are to become a Body Politick, uſing amongſt your ſelves Civil Government, and are not furniſhed with perſons of ſpecial Eminency above the reſt, to be choſen by you into Office of Government; Let your wiſdome and godlineſs appear not onely in chooſing ſuch perſons as do intirely love, and will promote the Common Good; but alſo in yielding unto them all due Honour and Obedience in their lawful Adminiſtrations, not beholding in them the ordinarineſs of their perſons, but Gods Ordinance for your good: not being like the fooliſh multitude, who more honour the gay Coat, then either the virtuous minde of the man, or the glorious Ordinance of the Lord: But you know better things, and that the Image of the Lords Power and Authority which the Magiſtrate beareth is honourable, in how mean perſons ſoever; and this duty you may the more willingly, and ought the more conſcionably to perform, becauſe you are (at leaſt for the preſent) to have them for your ordinary Governours, which your ſelves ſhall make choice of for that Work.

Sundry other things of Importance I could put you in minde of, and of thoſe before-mentioned in more words; but I will not ſo far wrong your godly mindes, as to think you heedleſs of theſe things, there being alſo divers amongſt you ſo well able both to admoniſh themſelves and others of what concerneth them. Theſe few things therefore, and the ſame in few words, I do earneſtly commend unto your Care and Conſcience, joyning therewith my daily and inceſſant Prayers unto the Lord, That He who hath made the Heavens, and the Earth, and Sea, and all Rivers of Waters, and whoſe Providence is over all his Works, eſpecially over all his dear Children for good, would ſo guide and guard you in your Wayes, as inwardly by his Spirit, ſo outwardly by the hand of his power, as that both you, and we alſo for and with you, may have after-matter of praiſing his Name all the dayes of your and our lives. Fare you well in Him in whom you truſt, and in whom I reſt,

An unfeigned well-willer of your happy ſucceſs in this hopefull Voyage,

JOHN ROBINSON.

Upon the receipt of this letter, the company was called together, and it was publickly read amongſt them, which had good acceptation with all, and after-fruit with many.

Of the Troubles that befell the first Planters upon the Coast of England, *and in their Voyage in coming over into* New England, *and their arrival at* Cape Cod, *alias* Cape James.

ALl things being got ready, and every busines dispatched, they ordered and distributed their Company for either Ship, (as they conceived for the best) and chose a Governour, and two or three Assistants for each Ship, to order the people by the way, and to see to the disposing of the Provision, and such like affairs; all which was not only with the liking of the Masters of the Ships, but according to their desires: which being done, they set Sail from *Southampton* the fifth of *August*, 1620. But alas, the best Enterprizes meet oftentimes with many discouragements; for they had not sailed farre, before Mr. *Reynolds* the Master of the lesser Ship, complained that he found his Ship so leak, as he durst not put further to Sea: on which they were forced to put in at *Dartmouth*, Mr. *Jones* the Master of the biggest Ship likewise putting in there with him; and the said lesser Ship was searched, and mended, and judged sufficient for the Voyage by the Workmen that mended her: On which, both the said Ships put to Sea the second time, but they had not sailed above an hundred Leagues, ere the said *Reynolds* again complained of his Ship being so leak, as that he feared he should founder in the Sea, if he held on; and then both Ships bore up again, and went in at *Plimouth*: but being there searched again, no great matter appeared, but it was judged to be the general weakness of the Ship. But the true reason of the retarding and delaying of matters was not as yet discerned: the one of them respecting the Ship (as afterwards was found), was, that she was over-Masted, which when she came to her trim in that respect, she did well, and made divers profitable and successful Voyages. But secondly, and more especially, by the deceit of the Master and his Company,

who

who were hired to ſtay a whole year in the Country; but now fancying diſlike, and fearing want of Victuals, they plotted this ſtratagem to free themſelves, as afterwards was known, and by ſome of them confeſſed; for they apprehended that the greater Ship being of force, and in whom moſt of the Proviſions were beſtowed, that ſhe would retain enough for her ſelf, whatſoever became of them and the Paſſengers: But ſo ſtrong was ſelf-love and deceit in this man, as he forgot all duty and former kindneſs, and dealt thus falſly with them. Theſe things thus falling out, it was reſolved by the whole to diſmiſs the leſſer Ship, and part of the Company with her, and that the other part of the Company ſhould proceed in the bigger Ship: which when they had ordered matters in reference thereunto, they made another ſad parting, the one Ship, (*viz.*) the leſſer going back for *London*, and the other (*viz.*) *The May-flower*, Mr. *Jones* being Maſter, proceeding on in the intended Voyage.

Theſe troubles being blown over, and now all being compact together in one Ship, they put to Sea again with a proſperous wind: but after they had enjoyed fair winds for a ſeaſon, they met with many contrary winds and fierce ſtorms, with which their Ship was ſhrewdly ſhaken, and her upper works made very leaky, and one of the main Beams of the Mid-ſhips was bowed and cracked, which put them to ſome fear that ſhe would not be able to perform the Voyage; on which the principal of the Seamen and Paſſengers had ſerious conſultation what to do, whether to return or hold on: but the Ship proving ſtrong under water, by a Screw the ſaid Beam was brought into his place again; which being done, and well ſecured by the Carpenter, they reſolved to hold their Voyage, and ſo after many boiſterous ſtorms in which they could bear no ſail, but were forced to lye at Hull many dayes together; after long beating at Sea, they fell in with the land called * *Cape Cod*: the

* Cape Cod, *ſo called at the firſt by Captain* Goſnold *and his Company*, Anno 1602, *becauſe they took much of that Fiſh there; and afterward called* Cape James *by Captain* Smith. *The Point of the Cape is called* Point Care, *and* Tuckers Terrour; *and by the French and Dutch* Mallacar, *by reaſon of the perillous Sholes.*

which being made, and certainly known to be it, they were not a little joyful. After ſome little deliberation had amongſt themſelves with the Maſter of the Ship, they tacked about to ſtand to the Southward, to finde ſome place about *Hudſons River*; (according to their firſt intentions) for their Habitations: But they had not ſailed that Courſe above half a day, but they fell amongſt perillous Sholes and Breakers, and they were ſo farre intangled therewith, as they conceived themſelves in great danger; and the wind ſhrinking upon them withall, they reſolved to bear up again for the Cape aforeſaid: the next day, by Gods Providence, they got into the Cape harbour. Thus they arrived at *Cape Cod*, alias *Cape James*, in *November* 1620. and being brought ſafe to land, they fell upon their knees and bleſſed the God of Heaven, who had brought them over the vaſt and furious Ocean, and delivered them from many perils and miſeries.

Of this Plot betwixt the Dutch and Mr. Jones, I have had late and certain Intelligence.

Nevertheleſs, it is to be obſerved, that their putting into this place was partly by reaſon of a ſtorm, by which they were forced in, but more eſpecially by the fraudulency and contrivance of the aforeſaid Mr. *Jones*, the Maſter of the Ship: for, their Intention, as is before-noted, and his Engagement, was to *Hudſons River*; but ſome of the *Dutch* having notice of their intentions, and having thoughts about the ſame time of erecting a Plantation there likewiſe, they fraudulently hired the ſaid *Jones* by delayes while they were in *England*, and now under pretence of the danger of the Sholes, *&c.* to diſappoint them in their going thither: But God out-ſhoots Satan oftentimes in his own Bow; for had they gone to *Hudſons River* as before expreſſed, it had proved very dangerous to them: for although it is a place farre more commodious, and the Soil more fertile, yet then abounding with a multitude of pernicious Salvages, whereby they would have been in great peril of their lives, and ſo the work of tranſplanting the Goſpel into theſe parts, much endangered to have been hindred and retarded: but God ſo diſpoſed, that the place where they afterward ſetled was much depopulated by a great Mortality amongſt the Natives,

tives, which fell out about two years before their arrival, whereby he made way for the carrying on of his good purpose in promulgating of his Gospel as aforesaid.

But before we pass on, let the Reader with me make a pause, and seriously consider this poor peoples present condition, the more to be raised up to admiration of Gods goodness towards them in their preservation: for being now passed the vast Ocean, and a sea of Troubles before in their Preparation, they had now no Friends to welcome them, no Inns to entertain or refresh them, no Houses, or much less Towns to repair unto to seek for succour: the *Barbarians* that *Paul* the Apostle fell amongst in his Shipwrack at the Isle *Melita*, *shewed him no small kindness*; but these Salvage *Barbarians* when they met with them (as after will appear) were readier to fill their sides full of Arrows, then otherwise: and for the season, it was Winter, and they that know the Winters of the Country, know them to be sharp and violent, subject to cruel and fierce Storms, dangerous to travel to known places, much more to search unknown Coasts. Besides, what could they see but a hideous and desolate Wilderness, full of wilde Beasts and wilde Men? and what multitudes of them there were, they then knew not: neither could they as it were go up to the Top of *Pisgah*, to view from this Wilderness a more goodly Country to feed their hopes; for which way soever they turned their eyes (save upward to Heaven) they could have little solace or content in respect of any outward object, for Summer being ended, all things stand in appearance with a weather-beaten face, and the whole Country full of Woods and Thickets, represented a wilde and salvage hew; if they looked behinde them, there was the mighty Ocean which they had passed, and was now as a main Bar and Gulph to separate them from all the Civil Parts of the World. The Master of the Ship and his Company pressing with speed to look out a place for their Settlement at some near distance, for the season was such as he would not stir from thence, untill a safe Harbour was discovered by them with their Boat: yea, it was sometimes threatned, that if they would not Acts 28.

get a place in time, that they and their goods ſhould be turned on ſhore, and that the Ship would leave them; the Maſter expreſſing himſelf, that Proviſions ſpent apace, and that he would keep ſufficient for himſelf and his Company for their return. It is true indeed, that the love and affections of their Brethren they left behinde them in *Holland*, was cordial and intire towards them, but they had little power to help them or themſelves: what could now ſuſtain them but the Spirit of God and his grace? Ought not, and may not the Children of theſe Fathers rightly ſay, *Our Fathers were Engliſh-men, which came over this great Ocean, and were ready to periſh in this Wilderneſs; but they cried unto the Lord, and he heard their voice, and looked on their adverſity: Let them therefore praiſe the Lord, becauſe he is good, and his mercy endureth for ever; yea, let them who have been the redeemed of the Lord ſhew how he hath delivered them from the hand of the oppreſſor, when they wandred in the deſert Wilderneſs out of the way, and found no City to dwell in*; both *hungry and thirſty, their ſoul was overwhelmed in them*: Let them therefore *confeſs before the Lord his loving kindneſs, and his wonderful works before the children of men?*

Pſal. 107. 1, 2, 4, 5, 8.

Of the firſt Planters their Combination by entring into a Body Politick together; With their proceedings in diſcovery of a place for their Settlement and Habitation.

BEing thus fraudulently dealt with (as you have heard) and brought ſo farre to the Northward, the ſeaſon being ſharp, and no hopes of obtaining their intended Port; and thereby their Patent being made void and uſeleſs as to another place: Being at *Cape Cod* upon the Eleventh of *November* 1620. it was thought meet for their more orderly carrying on of their Affairs, and accordingly by mutual conſent they entred into a ſolemn Combination as a Body Politick, To ſubmit to ſuch Government and Governours, Laws and Ordinances, as ſhould by

by a general Conſent from time to time be made choice of, and aſſented unto. The Contents whereof followeth.

This was the firſt Foundation of the Government of New-Plimouth.

IN *the Name of God, Amen.* We whoſe Names are under-written, the Loyal Subjects of our dread Soveraign Lord King *James*, by the grace of God of *Great Britain, France* and *Ireland*, King, *Defendor of the Faith, &c.* Having undertaken for the glory of God, and advancement of the Chriſtian Faith, and the Honour of our King and Countrey, a Voyage to plant the firſt Colony in the Northern parts of *Virginia*; Do by theſe Preſents ſolemnly and mutually, in the preſence of God and one another, Covenant and Combine our ſelves together into a Civil Body Politick, for our better ordering and preſervation, and furtherance of the ends aforeſaid: and by virtue hereof do enact, conſtitute and frame ſuch juſt and equal Laws, Ordinances, Acts, Conſtitutions and Officers, from time to time, as ſhall be thought moſt meet and convenient for the general good of the Colony; unto which we promiſe all due ſubmiſſion and obedience. In witneſs whereof we have hereunto ſubſcribed our Names at *Cape Cod*, the eleventh of *November*, in the Reign of our Soveraign Lord King *James*, of *England, France* and *Ireland* the eighteenth, and of *Scotland* the fifty fourth, *Anno Dom.* 1620.

John Carver.
William Bradford.
Edward Winſlow.
William Brewſter.
Iſaac Allerton.
Miles Standiſh.
John Alden.
Samuel Fuller.
Chriſtopher Martin.
William Mullins.
William White.
Richard Warren.
John Howland.
Steven Hopkins.
Edward Tilly.
John Tilly.
Francis Cook.
Thomas Rogers.
Thomas Tinker.
John Ridgdale.
Edward Fuller.

John

John Turner.	*Digery Prieſt.*	*Richard Clark.*
Francis Eaton.	*Thomas Williams.*	*Richard Gardiner.*
James Chilton.	*Gilbert Winſlow.*	*John Allerton.*
John Craxton.	*Edmond Margeſon.*	*Thomas Engliſh.*
John Billington.	*Peter Brown.*	*Edward Doten.*
Joſes Fletcher.	*Richard Bitteridge.*	*Edward Lieſter.*
John Goodman.	*George Soule.*	

Mr. John Carver *the firſt Governour of the Juriſdiction of* New Plimouth

After this, they choſe Mr. *John Carver*, a man godly and well-approved amongſt them, to be their Governour for that year.

Neceſſity now calling them to look out a place for Habitation, as well as the Maſter and Mariners importunity urging them thereunto; while their Carpenter was trimming up of their Boat, ſixteen of their men tendred themſelves to go by land and diſcover thoſe neareſt places; which was accepted: and they being well armed, were ſent forth on the ſixteenth of *November* 1620. and having marched about a mile by the Sea-ſide, they eſpied five *Indians*, who ran away from them, and they followed them all that day ſundry miles, but could not come to ſpeech with them: ſo night coming on, they betook themſelves to their Rendezvouz, and ſet out their Sentinels, and reſted in quiet that night; and the next morning they followed the *Indians* tracts, but could not finde them nor their dwellings, but at length lighted on a good quantity of clear ground near to a Pond of freſh water, where formerly the *Indians* had planted *Indian* Corn, at which place they ſaw ſundry of their graves; and proceeding further, they found new Stubble where *Indian* Corn had been planted the ſame year; alſo they found where lately an houſe had been, where ſome Planks and a great Kettle was remaining, and heaps of ſand newly paddled with their hands, which they digged up, and found in them divers fair *Indian* Baskets filled with Corn, ſome whereof was in Ears fair and good of divers colours, which ſeemed to them a very goodly ſight, having ſeen none before: Of which Rarities they took ſome to carry to their friends on Shipboard, like as the

Iſraelites

Iſraelites Spies brought from *Eſhcol* ſome of the good fruits of the Land: but finding little that might make for their encouragement as to ſituation, they returned, being gladly received by the reſt of their Company.

After this, their Shallop being ready, they ſet out the ſecond time for a more full Diſcovery of this place, eſpecially a place that ſeemed to be an opening as they went into the ſaid Harbour ſome two or three Leagues off, which the Maſter judged to be a River; about thirty of them went out on this ſecond Diſcovery, the Maſter of the Ship going with them: but upon the more exact diſcovery thereof, they found it to be no Harbour for Ships, but onely for Boats. There they alſo found two of their Houſes covered with Mats, and ſundry of their Implements in them; but the people ran away, and could not be ſeen: Alſo there they found more of their Corn and Beams of various colours; the Corn and Beams they brought away, purpoſing to give them full ſatisfaction when they ſhould meet with any of them. And here is to be noted, a ſpecial and a great mercy to this people, that here they got them ſeed to plant them Corn the next year, or otherwiſe they might have ſtarved, for they had none, nor any likelyhood to get any, untill the ſeaſon had been paſt (as the ſequel did manifeſt) neither is it likely that they had had this, if the firſt Diſcovery had not been made, for the ground was now all covered with Snow, and hard frozen; but the Lord is never wanting unto thoſe that are his in their greateſt needs. Let his holy Name have all the praiſe.

About 6 monthes after they gave them full ſatisfaction to their content.

A ſpecial Providence of God to be noted.

Having thus diſcovered this place, it was controverted amongſt them what to do, touching their abode and ſetling there. Some thought it beſt for many Reaſons to abide there:

1. Becauſe of the Convenience of the Harbour for Boats, though not for Ships.

2. There was good Corn-ground ready to their hands, as was ſeen by experience in the goodly Corn it yielded, which would again agree with the ground, and be natural ſeed for the ſame.

3. Cape *Cod* was like to be a place for good Fishing, for they saw daily great Whales of the best kinde for Oyl.

4. The place was likely to be healthful, secure, and defensible.

5. and lastly, The especial Reason was, that now the heart of Winter and unseasonable weather was come upon them, so as they could not go upon Coasting and Discovery, without danger of losing both men and Boat, upon which would follow the overthrow of all, especially considering what variable winds and sudden storms do there arise; also cold and wet lodging had so tainted their people, as scarce any of them were free from vehement Coughs, as if they should continue long, it would indanger the lives of many, and breed diseases & infection amongst them. Again, that as yet they had some Provisions, but they would quickly be spent, and then they should have nothing to comfort them in their labour and toyl that they were like to undergo. At the first it was also conceived, whiles they had competent Victuals that the Ship would stay, but when that grew low, they would be gone, and let them shift for themselves.

Others again urged to go to *Agawam*, alias *Angawam*, a place about twenty Leagues off to the Northward, which they had heard to be an excellent Harbour for Ships, better ground, and better fishing.

Secondly, for any thing they knew there might be hard by us a farre better Seat, and it would be a great hinderance to seat where they should remove again.

About this time Mrs. Susanna White *was delivered of a Son who was named* Peregrine; *he was the first of the English that was born in* N. E. *and still surviveth, & is the Lieutenant of the Military Company of* Marshfield.

But to omit many Reasons and Replies concerning this matter, it was in the end concluded to make some discovery within the Bay, but in no case so farre as *Angawam*. Besides, *Robert Coppin* their Pilot made relation of a great Navigable River, and good Harbour in the other Head-land of the Bay, almost right over against Cape *Cod*, being in a right line not much above eight Leagues distant, in which he had once been; and beyond that place they that were to go on discovery were enjoyned not to go.

The Month of *November* being spent on these Affairs, and having

having much foul weather; on the ſixth of *December* they concluded to ſend out their Shallop again on a third Diſcovery. The Names of thoſe that went on this Diſcovery, were Mr. *John Carver*, Mr. *William Bradford*, Mr. *Edward Winſlow*, Captain *Miles Standiſh*, Mr. *John Howland*, Mr. *Richard Warren*, Mr. *Steven Hopkins*, Mr. *Edward Tilly*, Mr. *John Tilly*, Mr. *Clark*, Mr. *Coppin*, *John Allerton*, *Thomas Engliſh*, *Edward Doten*, with the Maſter Gunner of the Ship, and three other of the common Seamen; theſe ſet ſail on Wedneſday the ſixth of *December* 1620, intending to Circulate the deep Bay of Cape *Cod*, the weather being very cold, ſo as the Spra of the Sea lighting on their Coats, they were as if they had been glazed; notwithſtanding, that night they got down into the bottom of the Bay, and as they drew near the ſhore they ſaw ſome ten or twelve *Indians*, and landed about a League off them, (but with ſome difficulty, by reaſon of the Sholes in that place) where they tarried that night. In the morning they divided their Company to coaſt along, ſome on ſhore, and ſome in the Boat, where they ſaw the *Indians* had been the day before cutting up of a Fiſh like a *Grampus*; and ſo they ranged up and down all that day, but found no people, nor any place they liked as fit for their ſettlement: and that night they on ſhore met with their Boat at a certain Creek, where they made them a Barricado of boughs and logs for their lodging that night, and being weary betook themſelves to their reſt. The next morning about five of the clock (ſeeking guidance and protection from God by prayer) and refreſhing themſelves in way of preparation to perſiſt on in their intended Expedition, ſome of them carried their Arms down to the Boat, having laid them up in their Coats from the moiſture of the weather; but others ſaid they would not carry theirs untill they went themſelves: But preſently all on a ſudden, about the dawning of the day, they heard a great and ſtrange cry, and one of their Company being on board, came haſtily in, and cried, *Indians*, *Indians*, and withall their Arrows came flying amongſt them; on which, all their men ran with ſpeed to recover their

This is thought to be a place called Namskeket.

Arms (as by Gods good Providence they did.) In the mean time, ſome of thoſe that were ready diſcharged two Muskets at them, and two more ſtood ready at the entrance of their Rendezvouz, but were commanded not to ſhoot, untill they could take full aim at them; and the other two charged again with all ſpeed, for there were onely four that had Arms there, and defended the Barricado which was firſt aſſaulted. The cry of the *Indians* was dreadful, eſpecially when they ſaw their men run out of their Rendezvouz towards the Shallop to recover their Arms; the *Indians* wheeling about upon them: but ſome running out with Coats of Mail, and Cuttle-axes in their hands, they ſoon recovered their Arms, and diſcharged amongſt them, and ſoon ſtayed their violence. Notwithſtanding, there was a luſty man, and no leſs valiant, ſtood behinde a Tree within half a Musket ſhot, and let fly his Arrows amongſt them: he was ſeen to ſhoot three Arrows, which were all avoided, and ſtood three ſhot of a Musket, untill one taking full aim at him, made the Bark or Splinters of the Tree fly about his ears; after which he gave an extraordinary ſhriek, and away they went all of them: and ſo leaving ſome to keep the Shallop, they followed them about a quarter of a mile, that they might conceive that they were not afraid of them, or any way diſcouraged.

This place on this occaſion was called, the firſt Encounter.

Thus it pleaſed God to vanquiſh their Enemies, and to give them deliverance, and by his ſpecial Providence ſo to diſpoſe, that not any one of them was either hurt or hit, though their Arrows came cloſe by them; and ſundry of their Coats which hung up in the Barricado were ſhot through and through: for which ſalvation and deliverance they rendred ſolemn Thanksgiving unto the Lord.

From hence they departed, and coaſted all along, but diſcerned no place likely for Harbour, and therefore haſted to the place their Pilot (as aforeſaid) told them of, who aſſured them that there was a good Harbour, and they might fetch it before night: of which they were glad, for it began to be foul weather.

After ſome hours ſailing it began to Snow and Rain, and about

about the middle of the Afternoon the wind increaſed, and the Sea became very rough, and they brake their Rudder, and it was as much as two men could do to ſteer the Boat with a couple of Oars; but the Pilot bid them be of good chear, for he ſaw the Harbour: but the ſtorm increaſing, and night drawing on, they bare what ſail they could to get in while they could ſee: but herewith they brake their Maſt in three pieces, and their Sail fell over-board in a very grown Sea, ſo as they had like to have been caſt away; yet by Gods mercy they recovered themſelves, and having the flood with them, ſtruck into the Harbour. But when it came to, the Pilot was deceived in the place, and ſaid, *Lord be merciful to us, my eyes never ſaw this place before:* and he and the Maſters Mate would have run the Boat aſhore in a Cove full of Breakers before the wind, but a luſty Seaman which ſteered bade them that rowed, *If they were men, about with her, elſe they were all caſt away*; the which they did with all ſpeed: ſo he bade them *be of good chear, and row hard, for there was a fair Sound before them, and he doubted not but they ſhould finde one place or other where they might ride in ſafety.* And although it was very dark, and rained ſore, yet in the end they got under the lee of a ſmall Iſland, and remained there all night in ſafety. But they knew not this to be an Iſland untill the next morning, but were divided in their mindes, ſome would keep the Boat, doubting they might be amongſt the *Indians*, others were ſo wet and cold they could not endure, but got on ſhore, and with much difficulty got fire, and ſo the whole were refreſhed, and reſted in ſafety that night. The next day rendring thanks to God for his great deliverance of them, and his continued merciful good Providence towards them, and finding this to be an Iſland, it being the laſt day of the week, they reſolved to keep the Sabbath there.

This was between the place called the Gurnets Noſe *and* Sagaquab, *by the mouth of* Plimouth *harbour.*

This was afterwards called Clarks Iſland, *becauſe Mr.* Clark *the Maſters Mate firſt ſtepped on ſhore thereon.*

On the ſecond day of the week following they ſounded the Harbour, and found it fit for Shipping, and marched into the Land, and found divers Corn fields, and little running Brooks, a place (as they ſuppoſed) fit for Situation, at leaſt it was the beſt that they could finde, and the ſeaſon and their preſent ne-

ceſſity made them glad to accept of it. So they returned again to their Ship with this News to the reſt of their people, which did much comfort their hearts.

On the fifteenth of *December* they weighed Anchor, to go to the place they had diſcovered, and arrived the ſixteenth day in the Harbour they had formerly diſcovered, and afterward took better view of the place, and reſolved where to pitch their Dwellings; and on the Five and twentieth day of *December* began to erect the firſt Houſe for common uſe, to receive them and their goods: and after they had provided a place for their goods and common ſtore (which was long in unlading for want of Boats, and by reaſon of foulneſs of the winter weather, and ſickneſs of divers) they began to build ſome ſmall Cottages for Habitation, as time would admit; and alſo conſulted of Laws and Orders both for their *Civil* and *Military Government*, as the neceſſity of their preſent condition did require. But that which was ſad and lamentable, that in two or three Moneths time half of their Company died, eſpecially in *January* and *February*, being the depth of Winter, wanting houſes and other comforts, being infected with the Scurvy, and other Diſeaſes, which this long Voyage and their incommodate condition had brought upon them, ſo as there died ſometimes two, ſometimes three on a day in the aforeſaid time, that of One hundred and odde perſons, ſcarce Fifty remained. Amongſt others in the time fore-named, died Mr. *William Mullins*, a man pious and well-deſerving, endowed alſo with a conſiderable outward Eſtate; and had it been the will of God that he had ſurvived, might have proved an uſeful Inſtrument in his place, with ſeveral others who deceaſed in this great and common affliction, whom I might take notice of to the like effect. Of thoſe that did ſurvive in this time of diſtreſs and calamity that was upon them, there was ſometimes but ſix or ſeven ſound perſons, who (to their great commendation be it ſpoken) ſpared no pains night nor day to be helpful to the reſt, not ſhunning to do very mean ſervices to help the weak and impotent. In which Sickneſs the Seamen ſhared alſo deeply, and many

many died, to about the one half of them before they went away. Thus being but few, and very weak, this was an opportunity for the Salvages to have made a prey of them, who were wont to be the moſt cruel and treacherous people in all theſe parts, even like Lions; but to them they were as Lambs, God ſtriking a dread in their hearts, ſo as they received no harm from them. The Lord alſo ſo diſpoſed, as aforeſaid, much to waſte them by a great Mortality, together with which were their own Civil Diſſentions, and Bloody Wars, ſo as the twentieth perſon was ſcarce left alive when theſe people arrived, there remaining ſad ſpectacles of that Mortality in the place where they ſeated, by many bones and skulls of the dead lying above-ground; whereby it appeared, that the living of them were not able to bury their dead. Some of the ancient *Indians* that are ſurviving at the writing hereof, do affirm, That about ſome two or three years before the firſt *Engliſh* here arrived, they ſaw a *Blazing Star* or *Comet*, which was a fore-runner of this ſad Mortality, for ſoon after it came upon them in extremity. Thus God made way for his people, by removing the Heathen, and planting them in the Land; yet we hope in mercy to ſome of the poſterity of theſe poor blinde Salvages, by being means (at leaſt ſtepping-ſtones) for others to come and Preach the Goſpel amongſt them: of which afterwards in its more proper place. But to return.

This ſeemeth to be the ſame that was ſeen about that time in Europe.

The *Indians* after their arrival would ſhew themſelves afarre off, but when they endeavoured to come near them, they would run away. But about the ſixteenth of *March*, 1621. a certain *Indian* called *Samoſet* came boldly amongſt them, and ſpake to them in broken Engliſh, which yet they could well underſtand; at which they marvelled: but at length they underſtood that he belonged to the Eaſtern parts of the Country, and had acquaintance with ſundry of the *Engliſh* Fiſhermen, and could name ſundry of them, from whom he learned his language. He became very profitable to them, in acquainting them with many things concerning the ſtate of the Country in the Eaſtern parts, as alſo of the people here; of their Names, Num-

Number, and Strength, of their Situation, and Diſtance from this place, and who was Chief amongſt them: He told them alſo of another *Indian* called *Squanto*, alias *Siſquantam*, one of this place, who had been in *England*, and could ſpeak better Engliſh then himſelf: And after courteous entertainment of him, he was diſmiſſed. Afterwards he came again, with ſome other Natives, and told them of the coming of the great *Sachem* named *Maſſaſoiet*, who (about four or five dayes after) came with the chief of his Friends and other Attendants, with the aforeſaid *Squanto*, with whom (after friendly entertainment and ſome gifts given him) they made a League of Peace with him, which continued with him and his Succeſſors to the time of the writing hereof. The terms and Conditions of the ſaid League is as followeth:

Of this ſee more in the year 1639.

I. *THat neither he, nor any of his, ſhould injure or do hurt to any of their people.*

II. *That if any of his did any hurt to any of theirs, he ſhould ſend the Offender that they might puniſh him.*

III. *That if any thing were taken away from any of theirs, he ſhould cauſe it to be reſtored; and they ſhould do the like to his.*

IV. *That if any did unjuſtly War againſt him, they would aid him; and if any did War againſt them, he ſhould aid them.*

V. *That he ſhould ſend to his Neighbour-Confederates, to certifie them of this, that they might not wrong them, but might be likewiſe compriſed in theſe Conditions of Peace.*

VI. *That when his Men came to them upon any occaſion, they ſhould leave their Arms* (which were then Bowes and Arrows) *behinde them.*

VII. Laſtly, *That ſo doing, their Soveraign Lord King* James *would eſteem him as His Friend and Ally.*

All which he liked well, and withall at the ſame time acknowledged himſelf content to become the Subject of our Soveraign Lord the King aforeſaid, His Heirs and Succeſſors; and gave unto them all the Lands adjacent, to them and their Heirs for ever.

After

After these things he returned to his place called *Sowams*, about fourty miles distant from *Plimouth*, but *Squanto* continued with them, and was their Interpreter, and proved a special Instrument sent of God for their good beyond expectation; he directed them in Planting their Corn, where to take their Fish, and to procure their Commodity; and also was their Pilot to bring them to unknown places for their profit, and never left them untill his death: He was a Native of this place where *Plimouth* is, and scarce any left besides himself. He was carried away (with divers others) by one named *Hunt*, a Master of a Ship, who thought to sell them for Slaves in *Spain*, but he got away for *England*, and was entertained by a Merchant in *London*, and imployed to *Newfound-land* and other parts; and at last brought hither into these parts by one Mr. *Dermer*, a Gentleman imployed by Sir *Ferdinando Gorges* and others, for Discovery, and other Designs in these parts: of whom I shall say something, because it is mentioned in a Book set forth *Anno* 1622. by the President and Council for *New-England*, *That he made the Peace between the Salvages of these parts and the English, of which this Plantation* (as it is intimated) *had the benefit:* and what a Peace it was, may appear by what befell him and his men.

This Merchants name was Mr. Slaney.

This Mr. *Dermer* was here the same year that these people came, as appears by a Relation written by him, bearing date *June* 30. *Anno* 1620. and they arrived in the Country in the Month of *November* following, so that there was but four Months difference: In which Relation to his honoured Friend, he hath these passages of this very place where *New-Plimouth* is; *I will first begin* (saith he) *with that place from whence* Squanto, *or* Tisquantam *was taken away, which in Captain* Smiths *Map is called* * Plimouth, *and I would that* Plimouth *had the like Commodities. I would that the first Plantation might here be seated, if there come to the number of Fifty persons, or upwards; otherwise at* Charlton, *because there the Salvages are lesse to be feared. The* Pocanakets, *which live to the West of* Plimouth, *bear an inveterate maligmity to the* English, *and are of more*

* *This name of* Plimouth *was so called not only for the reason here named, but also because* Plimouth *in* O.E. *was the last town they left in their Native Country; & for that they received many kindnesses from some Christians there.*

more ſtrength then all the Salvages from thence to Panobskut: *Their deſire of Revenge was occaſioned by an* Engliſh-man, *who having many of them on Board, made great ſlaughter of them with their Murderers and ſmall Shot, when (as they ſay) they offered no injury on their parts. Whether they were* Engliſh *or no, it may be doubted; yet they believe they were, for the* French *have ſo poſſeſt them: for which cauſe* Squanto *cannot deny but they would have killed me when I was at* Namaſſaket, *had he not intreated hard for me. The Soyl of the Borders of this great Bay, may be compared to moſt of the Plantations which I have ſeen in* Virginia. *The land is of divers ſorts; for* Patukſet *is an heavy but ſtrong Soyl,* Nauſet *and* Satukket *are for the moſt part a blackiſh and deep Mould, much like that where groweth the beſt Tobacco in* Virginia. *In the bottom of the Bay is great ſtore of Cod, Baſs or Mullet,* &c. And above all, he *commends* Pacannaket *for the richeſt Soyl, and much open ground, likely and fit for Engliſh Grain.* Maſſachuſets *is about nine leagues from* Plimouth, *and ſituate in the mids: between both is many* Iſlands *and* Peninſuls, *very fertile for the moſt part.* With ſundry ſuch Relations, which I forbear to tranſcribe, being now better known then they were to him.

Note.

This Gentleman was taken Priſoner by the *Indians* at *Mannamoſet*, (a place not farre from *Plimouth*, now well known) he gave them what they demanded for his liberty, but when they had got what they deſired, they kept him ſtill, and endeavoured to kill ſome of his men, but he was freed by ſeizing on ſome of them, and kept them bound till they gave him a Canooes load of Corn: Of which ſee *Purch. lib.* 9. *fol.* 1778. But this was *Anno* 1619.

After the writing of the former Relation, he came to the Iſle *Capewak*, which lieth South from this place in the way to *Virginia*, and the aforeſaid *Squanto* with him; where he going on ſhore amongſt the *Indians* to trade, as he uſed to do, was aſſaulted and betrayed by them, and all his men ſlain, but one that kept the Boat: but himſelf got on Board very ſore wounded, and they had cut off his Head upon the Cuddy of the Boat, had

Now called Martins Vineyard.

had not his Man reſcued him with a Sword, and ſo they got away, and made ſhift to get into *Virginia*, where he died, whether of his wounds, or the Diſeaſes of the Country, or both, is uncertain. By all which it may appear how farre this people were from Peace, and with what danger this Plantation was begun, ſave as the powerful hand of the Lord did protect them.

Theſe things were partly the Reaſons why the *Indians* kept aloof, as aforeſaid, and that it was ſo long ere they could come to ſpeech with any of them: Another Reaſon (as afterwards themſelves made known) was, how that about three years before theſe firſt Planters arrived, a certain *French* Ship was caſt away at *Cape Cod*, but the men got on ſhore, and ſaved their lives, and much of their Victuals and other goods; but afterwards the *Indians* heard of it, and gathered together from theſe parts, and never left watching and dogging them, untill they got advantage, and kill'd them all but three or four, which they kept and ſent from one *Sachem* to another to make ſport with them, and uſed them worſe then Slaves; and they conceived this Ship was now come to revenge it. Two of the ſaid *French* ſo uſed were redeemed by the aforeſaid Mr. *Dermer*, the other died amongſt the *Indians*: and as the *Indians* have reported, one of them lived amongſt them untill he was able to diſcourſe with them, and told them, *That God was angry with them for their wickedneſs, and would deſtroy them, and give their Country to another people, that ſhould not live like beaſts as they did, but ſhould be clothed, &c.* But they derided him, and ſaid, *That they were ſo many that God could not kill them.* His anſwer was, *That though they were never ſo many, God had many wayes to deſtroy them that they knew not.* Shortly after his death came the Plague, a Diſeaſe they never heard of before, and mightily ſwept them away, and left them as dung upon the earth (as you have heard.) Not long after came the *Engliſh* to *New-Plimouth*, and then ſeveral of the *Indians* began to minde the *French-mans* words, thinking him to be more then an ordinary man. And as the firſt part of his ſpeech had proved true, they began to

A memorable paſſage of Gods puniſhing of the Heathen for their notorious Blaſphemy, and other ſins.

be apprehensive of the latter, *viz. The loss of their Country*. This Relation the first Planters at *Plimouth*, after they came to be acquainted with them, several of them heard from divers of their ancient and gravest *Indians*, and have often seen the place where the *French* were surprised and taken, which place beareth the Name of *Frenchmans Point* with many to this day. This Relation for the verity thereof, being also very observeable, was thought meet to be here inserted: And let me adde a word hereunto, That it is very observable likewise, That God hath very evidently made way for the *English*, by sweeping away the Natives by some great Mortalities, as first, by the *Plague* here in *Plimouth* Jurisdiction, secondly, by the *Small Pox* in the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusets*, a very considerable people a little before the *English* came into the Country, as also at *Conecticot*, very full of *Indians* a little before the *English* went into those parts, and then the *Pequots* by the Sword of the *English* (as will appear in its place) and the Country now mostly possessed by the *English*. I might also mention several places in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*, peopled with considerable companies of proper able men, since the first Planters thereof came over, even in our sight, before they were in a capacity to improve any of their land, that have by the same hand of Providence been cut off, and so their Land even cleared for them, and now so replenished with their Posterity, that places are too straight for them. *By little and little* (saith God of old to his people) *will I drive them out from before thee, till thou be increased, and inherit the Land.*

Several instances of the Mortality of the Indians occasionally taken notice of.

Exod. 23. 28, 29. 30.

But before I pass on, let the Reader take notice of a very remarkable particular, which was made known to the said Planters at *Plimouth* some short space after their arrival, That the *Indians*, before they came to the *English* to make Friendship with them, they got all the *Powaws* in the Country, who for three dayes together in a horrid and devillish manner did Curse and Execrate them with their Conjurations: which Assembly and Service they held in a dark and dismall Swamp. But to return.

Behold how Satan laboured to hinder the Gospel from coming into N. E.

The

The Spring being now come, it pleased God that the Mortality which had taken away so many of the first Planters at *Plimouth*, ceased, and the Sick and Lame recovered apace, which was as it were a new life put into them; they having born this Affliction with much patience, being upheld by the Lord. And thus we are come unto the Twenty fifth of *March*, 1621.

1621.

THis Year several of the *Indian Sachems* (besides *Massasoiet* before-named) came unto the Government of *New-Plimouth*, and acknowledged themselves to be the Loyal Subjects of our Soveraign Lord King *James*, and subscribed unto a Writing to that purpose with their own hands; the tenour of which said Writing followeth, with their Names annexed thereunto. It being conceived by some that are judicious, that it may be of use in succeeding times, I thought meet here to insert it.

September 13. *Anno Dom.* 1621.

KNOW all men by these Presents, That we whose Names are under-written do acknowledge our selves to be the Loyal Subjects of King *James*, King of *Great Britain*, *France* and *Ireland*, Defender of the Faith, *&c.* In Witness whereof, and as a Testimonial of the same, we have Subscribed our Names or Marks, as followeth.

Ohquamehad. *Nattawahunt.* *Quadaquina.*
Cawnacome. *Caunbatant.* *Huttamoiden.*
Obbatinnua. *Chikkatabak.* *Apannow.*

Now followeth several Passages of the Providence of God to, and the further progress of the first Planters at Plimouth, *appertaining to the Year 1621.*

THey now began to hasten the Ship away, which tarried so long by reason of the necessity and danger that lay on them, because so many died both of themselves, and the Ships Company likewise; by which they became so few, as the Master durst not put out to Sea, untill those that lived recovered of their Sickness, and the Winter over.

The Spring of this year they Planted their first Corn in *New-England*, being instructed in the manner thereof by the fore-named *Squanto*; they likewise sowed some *English* Grain with little success, by reason partly of the badness of the Seed, and lateness of the season, or some other defect not then discerned.

In the Month of *April* in this year, their Governour Mr. *John Carver* fell sick, and within a few dayes after died, whose death was much lamented, and caused great heaviness amongst them; and there was indeed great cause. He was buried in the best manner they could, with as much Solemnity as they were in a capacity to perform, with the Discharge of some Volleys of shot of all that bare Arms. This worthy Gentleman was one of singular Piety, and rare for Humility, as appeared by his great condescendency, when as this poor miserable people were in great sickness and weakness, he shunned not to do very mean services for them, yea the meanest of them: He bare a share likewise of their labour in his own person, accordingly as their extreme necessity required, who being one also of a considerable Estate, spent the main part of it in this Enterprize, and from first to last approved himself not onely as their Agent in the first transacting of things, but also all along to the period of his life, to be a pious, faithful, and very beneficial Instrument, and now is reaping the fruit of his labour with the Lord.

His

His Wife who was alſo a gracious woman, lived not ſix weeks after him: ſhee being overcome with exceſſive grief for the loſs of ſo gracious an Husband, likewiſe died.

In ſome ſhort diſtance of time after this, Mr. *William Bradford* was choſen Governour of *Plimouth* in his ſtead, being not as yet well recovered of his weakneſs, having bin at the point of death, and Mr. *Iſaac Allerton* likewiſe was choſen to be his Aſſiſtant.

The ſecond of *July* in this year they ſent Mr. *Edward Winſlow* and Mr. *Steven Hopkins*, unto the great Sachem *Maſſaſoiet* aforeſaid, with a gratuitie to congratulate with him, and to view his Country, and likewiſe to take notice of what ſtrength of men he had, *&c.* having *Squanto* for their guide: who found his place to be about forty Miles from *New-Plimouth*, his People few in compariſon of what they had been, by reaſon of the mortality amongſt the *Indians* foremention'd. Theſe brought word upon their return of the *Narrhaganſets*, a People that lived on the otherſide of that great Bay, which are a People ſtrong and many in number, living compact together, and had not at all been touched with the waſting Plague before-ſpecified. They alſo brought a full intelligence in reference unto the particulars they were ſent about, and ſo returned in ſafety.

Thus their peace being well eſtabliſhed with the *Natives* about them, which was much furthered by an *Indian* named *Hobamak*, who came to live amongſt the *Engliſh*, he being a proper luſty young man, and one that was in account amongſt the *Indians* in thoſe parts for his valour, continued faithful and conſtant to the *Engliſh* until his death. He with the ſaid *Squanto* being ſent amongſt the *Indians* about buſineſs for the *Engliſh*, were ſurprized by an *Indian Sachem* named *Corbitant*, who was no friend to the *Engliſh*; he met with them at *Namaſſaket*, and began to quarrel with them, and offered to ſtab *Hobamak*, who being a ſtrong man, ſoon cleared himſelf of him; and with ſpeed came and gave intelligence to the Governour of *Plimouth*, ſaying, *he feared that* Squanto *was ſlain*, for they were both threatned, and for no other cauſe, but that they were friends to the *Engliſh*, and ſerviceable to them. On which it was thought

meet

meet to vindicate their Messengers, and not to suffer them to be thus wronged, and it was concluded to send some men to *Namaſsaket* well armed, and to fall upon them: whereupon fourteen men being well prepared were sent, under the conduct of Captain *Miles Standish*, who when they came thither beset the house, and the said Captain entred into the same to look for the said *Corbitans*, but he was fled, and so they missed of him; but understood that *Squanto* was alive; so they withheld, and did no hurt, save three of the *Natives* pressing out of the house when it was beset, were sorely wounded; which they brought home to their Town with them, and were dressed by their Chirurgion, and cured.

After this they had many Congratulations from divers *Sachems*, and much firmer peace, yea those of the Isle of *Capawak* sent to make friendship with them, and this *Corbitant* himself used the mediation of *Massasoit* to make his peace, but was shie to come near them a long time after.

After this, on the eighteenth of *September* they sent out their Boat to the *Massachusets* with ten men, and *Squanto* for their Interpreter, to discover and view that Bay, and to trade with the *Natives*; and found kinde entertainment with them, who expressed themselves to be much afraid of the *Tarateens*, a people in the Eastern part of *New-England*, which used to come in Harvest time and take away their corn, and many times kill some of their people, who after they had accomplished their business, returned in safety, and made report of the place, wishing they had been there seated. But the Lord who assigns to all men the bounds of their habitations, had appointed it for another end and use.

And thus they found the Lord to be with them in all their wayes, and to bless their out-goings and in-comings: for which let his holy Name have the praise for ever.

Being now well recovered in respect of health (as hath been said) they began to fit up their buildings against winter, and received in their first harvest, and had great plenty of fowl and fish, to their great refreshing.

About

About the ninth of *November* came in a ſmall ſhip to them unexpected, in which came Mr. *Robert Cuſhman*, who was both a godly man and an active and faithful agent, and uſeful inſtrument in the common intereſt of this firſt deſign; and there came with him in that ſhip, thirty five perſons, to remain and live in the Plantation: which did not a little rejoyce the firſt planters. And theſe when they came on ſhore, and found all well, and ſaw plenty of proviſions beyond their expectation, were alſo ſatisfied and no leſs glad: for coming in at *Cape Cod* before they came to *Plimouth*, and ſeeing nothing there but a barren place; they then began to think what ſhould become of them, if the People were dead or cut off by the *Indians*; and began to conſult upon ſome paſſages, which ſome of the Seamen had caſt out, to take the Sails from the Yard, leſt the ſhip ſhould get away and leave them: but the Maſter hearing thereof, gave them good words, and told them, *If any thing but well ſhould have befallen the People at* Plimouth, *he hoped he had proviſions enough to carry them to* Virginia, *and whiles he had any, they ſhould have their part*; which gave them good ſatisfaction.

This ſhip was called the Fortune, *in which came no Proviſions, which was one cauſe of a great famine that befell the Plantation of* New Plimouth *ſoon after.*

This ſhip ſtayed at *Plimouth* not above fourteen dayes, and returned; and ſoon after her departure, the People called the *Narrhaganſets* aforeſaid, ſent a meſſenger unto the Plantation, with a bundle of Arrows, tyed together with a Snakes skin, which their Interpreter *Squanto* told them was a threatning and a challenge; upon which the Governour of *Plimouth* ſent them a rough anſwer, (*viz.*) *That if they loved war rather then peace, they might begin when they would, they had done them no wrong, neither did they fear them, or ſhould they finde them unprovided*: and by another Meſſenger ſent the Snakes skin back again with Bullets in it, but they would not receive it, but ſent it back again. It is probable the reaſon of this their Meſſage to the *Engliſh*, was their own ambition, who ſince the death of ſo many *Indians*, thought to domineer and lord it over the reſt, and conceived the *Engliſh* would be a barre in their way, and ſaw that *Maſſaſoits* took shelter already under their wings; but this made the *Engliſh* more carefully to look to themſelves,

so as they agreed to close their Dwellings with a good strong Pale, and made Flankers in convenient places, with Gates to shut, which were every night locked, and a Watch kept, and when need required there was also Warding in the day time; and the Company was by the Governour and Captains advice, divided into four Squadrons, and every one had their quarter appointed them, unto which they were to repair: and if there should be any cry of *Fire*, a Company was appointed for a Guard with Muskets, whiles others quenched the Fire, the same to prevent *Indian* Treachery. And herewith I shall end the Passages of this Year.

1622.

AT the Spring of this Year (the *English* having certified the *Indians* of the *Massachusets* that they would come again unto them) they accordingly prepared to go thither, but upon some rumours which they heard from *Hobamak* their friend formenamed, who feared that the *Massachusets* were joyned with the *Narrhaganſets*, and might betray them if they were not careful, and intimated also his jealousies of *Squanto*, by what he gathered from some private whisperings between him and other *Indians*, that he was not really cordial to the *English* in what he pretended, made them cautelous. Notwithstanding, they sent out their Boat with ten of their principal men about the beginning of *April*, and both *Squanto* and *Hobamak* with them, in regard of the jealousie between them: but they had not been gone long, ere that an *Indian* belonging to *Squanto's* family came running, seeming to be in great fear, and told them that many of the *Narrhaganſets*, with *Corbitant*, (and he thought *Massasoit*) was coming against them: At which they betook them to their Armes, and supposing that the Boat was not as yet out of call, they caused a Piece of Ordnance to be discharged, to call them in again. But this proved other-

otherwise, for no *Indians* came. After this they went to the *Massachusets*, and had good Trade, and returned in safety, God be praised.

But by the former passages and things of like nature, they began to see that *Squanto* sought his own ends, and played his own game, by putting the *Indians* in fear, and drawing gifts from them to inrich himself; making them believe he could stir up war against them when he would, and make peace for them when he would; yea he made them believe, that the *English* kept the Plague buried in the ground, and could send it amongst whom they would, which did much terrifie the *Indians*, and made them more depend on him, and seek more to him then to their great Sachem *Massasoiet*; which procured him envy, and had like to have cost him his life; for after the discovery of these practises, the said *Massasoiet* sought it both privately and openly; which caused him to stick close to the *English*, and never after durst go from them until his death. They also made good use of the emulation that grew between *Hobamak* and him, which made them both carry more squarely, and the Governour seemed to countenance the one, and their Captain the other, by which they had the better intelligence, and it made them both the more diligent.

This was said to be a barrel of Gun-powder buried in the ground.

About the latter end of *May* they espied a vessel at sea, which at the first they thought to be a *French-man*, but it proved one that belonged to Mr. *Thomas Weston* a Merchant, which came from a ship which he and another had sent out on fishing to a place called *Damarels Cove*, in the Eastern parts of *N. E.* this boat brought seven men, and some letters, but no provisions to them, of which they were in continual expectation from *England*, which expectations were frustrated in that behalf, for they never had any supply to any purpose after this time, but what the Lord helped them to raise by their industry amongst themselves: for all that came afterwards was too short for the passengers that came with it.

After this the same year, the above-named Mr. *Thomas Weston*, who had formerly been one of the Merchant-adven-

turers to the Plantation of *New-Plimouth* (but had now broken off and deserted the general concerns thereof) sent over two ships on his own particular interest; in the one of them came sixty lusty men, who were to be put on shore at *Plimouth*, for the ship was to go with other passengers to *Virginia*; these were courteously entertained (with the seven men fore-named belonging to the said *Weston*, at *Plimouth* aforesaid) until the ship returned from *Virginia*, which was the most part of that Summer; many of them being sick, and all of them destitute of habitation, and unacquainted with this new beginning: at the ships return from *Virginia*, by the direction of the said Mr. *Weston* their Master, or such as he had set over them, they removed into the *Massachusets Bay*; he having got a Pattent for some part there, yet they left all their sick folk at *Plimouth*, until they were setled and fitted for housing to receive them: These were an unruly company, and had no good government over them, and by disorder fell into many wants, as afterwards will appear.

The one named the Sparrow, *the other the* Charity.

But before I pass on, I may not omit the mentioning of a courteous Letter that came in the vessel above-named, in which the above-said seven men came, being directed to the Governour of *Plimouth*, with respect unto the whole *Plantation*, from a Captain of a ship at the Eastward, who came thither on a fishing voyage; the which for the ingenuity of the man, and his courtesie therein expressed, may not unfitly be here inserted, being inscribed as followeth.

To all his good Friends at *Plimouth*.

FRiends, Country-men and Neighbours, I salute you, and wish you all health and happinesse in the Lord: I make bold with these few lines to trouble you, because, unless I therein shame me, I can do no less. Bad news doth spread it self too far, yet I will so far inform, that my self with many good friends in the South Colony of Virginia *have received such a blow, that four hundred persons large will not make good our losses. Therefore I do intreat you, although*

not knowing you, that the old rule which I learned when I went to school, may be sufficient, that is, happy is he who other mens harms doth make to beware; and now again and again, wishing all those that willingly would serve the Lord, all health and happiness in this World, and everlasting peace in the World to come:

I rest, yours

JOHN HUDSON.

In the same Vessel the Governour returned a thankful Answer, as was meet, and sent a Boat of their own with them, which was piloted by them; in which Mr. *Edward Winslow* was sent to procure what Provisions he could of the Ship, who was kindly received by the aforesaid Gentleman, who not onely spared what he could, but wrote to others to do the like: by which means the Plantation had a good quantity of Provisions.

Although this was not much amongst them all, yet it was a very seasonable blessing and supply, they being now in a low condition for want of food.

This Summer they built a Fort with good Timber, both strong and comely, which was of good defence, made with a flat Roof, and Battlements, on which Fort their Ordnance were mounted, and where they kept constant Watch, especially in time of danger: It served them also for a Meeting-house, and was fitted accordingly for that use. It was a great Work for them to do in their weakness, and times of want, but the danger of the time required it, there being continual rumours of the *Indians*, and fears of their rising against them, especially the *Narrhaganssets*, and also the hearing of that great and sad Massacre in *Virginia* above-named.

It may not here be omitted, that notwithstanding all their great pains and industry, and the great hopes they had of a large Crop, the Lord seemed to threaten them with more and sorer Famine by a great Drought, which continued from the third week in *May*, until the middle of *July*, without any Rain, and with great heat of Weather for the most part, insomuch as their Corn began to wither away, although it was planted with

with Fish, according to their usual manner in those times; yet at length it began to languish sore, and some of the dryer grounds was parched like withered Hay, part whereof was never recovered. Upon which they set apart a solemn Day of Humiliation, to seek the Lord by humble and fervent Prayer in this great distress: and he was pleased to give them a gracious and speedy answer, both to their own and the *Indians* admiration that lived amongst them; for all the morning, and greatest part of the day, it was clear weather, and very hot, and not a Cloud nor any sign of Rain to be seen, yet towards evening it began to overcast, and shortly after to Rain, with such sweet and gentle showers, as gave them cause of rejoycing and blessing God: it came without either Wind or Thunder, or any violence, and by degrees in that abundance, as that the Earth was throughly wet, and soaked therewith, which did so apparently revive and quicken the decayed Corn and other Fruits, as was wonderful, and made the *Indians* astonished to behold. A little before the Lord sent this Rain of Liberalities upon his people, one of them having occasion to go to the house of the afore-named *Hobamak* the *Indian*, he the said *Hobamak* said unto him, *I am much troubled for the* English, *for I am afraid they will lose all their Corn by the Drought, and so they will be all starved; as for the* Indians; *they can shift better then the* English, *for they can get Fish to help themselves.* But afterwards the same man having occasion to go again to his house, he said to him, *Now I see that the* English-mans *God is a good God, for he hath heard you, and sent you Rain, and that without Storms, and Tempests, and Thunder, which usually we have with our Rain, which breaks down our Corn, but your stands whole and good still; surely your God is a good God*: or with words to the like effect.

The person that made this Relation is still surviving, and a principal man in the Jurisdiction of Newr Plimouth.

And after this gracious return of Prayers in this so seasonable a blessing of the Rain, the Lord sent them such seasonable showers, with interchange of warm weather, as (through his blessing) caused in its time a fruitful and liberal Harvest, to their great Comfort and Rejoycing: for which Mercy, in

time

time convenient, they also solemnized a Day of Thanksgiving unto the Lord.

Now the welcome Harvest approached, in the which all had some refreshment, but it arose but to a little in comparison of a whole years supply; partly by reason they were not yet well acquainted with the manner of the Husbandry of the *Indian* Corn, (having no other) and also their many other Imployments; but chiefly their weakness for want of food, so as to appearance Famine was like to ensue, if not some way prevented: Markets there was none to go unto, but onely the *Indians*; but they had no Trading-stuff. But behold now another Providence of God; A Ship came into the Harbour, one Captain *Jones* being chief in her, set out by some Merchants to discover all the Harbours between *Cape Cod* and *Virginia*, and to Trade along the Coast. This Ship had store of *English* Beads, (which were then good trade) and some Knives, but would sell none but at dear rates, and also a good quantity together; yet they were glad of the occasion, and fain to buy at any rate: they were fain to give after the rate of *Cent. per Cent.* if not more, and yet pay away Coat-Beaver at three shillings *per* pound. By this means they were fitted again to trade for Beaver and other things, and so procured what Corn they could.

Another good providence of God tending to their relief.

But here let me take liberty to make a little digression; There was in the Ship sent by Mr. *Weston* fore-named (in which his Men came) a Gentleman named Mr. *John Forey*, he had been Secretary in *Virginia*, and was now going home Passenger in this Ship. After his departure he wrote a Letter to the Governour of *Plimouth*, in the Postscript whereof he hath these expressions following:

"*To your self and Mr.* Brewster *I must humbly acknowledge* "*my self many wayes indebted, whose Books I would have you* "*think very well bestowed, who esteems them such Jewels. My* "*haste would not suffer me to remember, much less to beg Mr.* "Ainsworths *elaborate Work on the five Books of* Moses; *both* "*his and Mr.* Robinsons *do highly commend the Authors, as being*

"*most*

"most conversant in the Scriptures of all others: and what good "who knows it may please God to work by them through my hands, "though himself never by, who finds such high content in them. God "have you safe in his keeping.

August 28. 1622. Your unfeigned and firm Friend,

JOHN POREY.

These things I here insert, partly for the honours sake of the Authors memory, which this Gentleman doth so ingenuously acknowledge, and also the credit and good that he procured unto the Plantation of *Plimouth* after his return, and that amongst those of no mean Rank. But to return.

Mr. *Weston's* people fore-named, who were now seated in the Bay of the *Massachusets*, at a place called by the *Indians Wessagusquese*, and by disorder (as it seemed) had made havock of their Provision, they began now to conceive that want would come upon them, and hearing that their Neighbours at *Plimouth* had bought Trading-stuff, as aforesaid, and intended to Trade for Corn, they wrote to the Governour, and desired that they might joyn with them, and they would imploy their small Ship in this service, and also requested to lend or sell them so much of their Trading-stuff as their part might come to, which was agreed unto on equal terms, so they went out in the Expedition, with an intention to go about *Cape Cod* to the Southwards, but meeting with cross Winds, and other Crosses, went in at *Manamoik*, where the aforesaid *Squanto*, being their Guide and Interpreter, fell sick, and within a few dayes died: A little before his death, he desired the Governour of *Plimouth* (who then was there) *to pray for him, that he might go to the* Englishmans *God in Heaven*, and bequeathed divers of his things to sundry of his *English* Friends, as Remembrances of his love: of whom they had a great loss.

Now by the English called Weymouth.

Squanto's *Death.*

Here they got a considerable quantity of Corn, and so returned.

turned. After these things *John Sanders*, who was left chief over Mr. *Westons* men at *Wesagusquaset*, in the Month of *February* sent a Messenger, shewing the great wants they were fallen into, and would have borrowed Corn of the *Indians*, but they would lend him none; and desired advice whether he might take it from them by force to succour his men, untill return from the Eastward, whither he was now going: But the Governour and the rest disswaded him by all means from it, for it might so exasperate the *Indians*, as might endanger their safety, and all of them might smart for it: for they had already heard how they had wronged the *Indians*, by stealing their Corn, &c. so as the Natives were much incensed against them: yea, so base were some of their own Company, as they went and told the *Indians*, that their governour was purposed to come and take their Corn by force, which with other things made them enter into a Conspiracy against the *English*. And herewith I end the Relation of the most Remarkable Passages of Gods Providence towards the first Planters, which fell out in this Year.

1623.

MR. *Westons* people fore-named, notwithstanding all helps they could procure for supply of Provisions, fell into great Extremity, which was occasioned by their excessive expence while they had it, or could get it; and after they came into want, many sold away their Clothes and Bed-coverings; others were so base as they became servants to the *Indians*, and would cut them Wood, and fetch them Water for a Cap full of Corn; others fell to stealing both night and day from the *Indians*, of which they grievously complained. In the end they came to that misery, that some starved and died with hunger; and one in gathering of Shell-fish was so weak, as he stuck fast in the mud, and was found dead in the place; and

moſt of them left their Dwellings, and were ſcattered up and down in the Woods by the Water-ſide, where they could finde Ground-nuts and Clams, here ſix, and there ten, by which their carriages they became contemned and ſcorned of the *Indians*, inſomuch as they began greatly to inſult over them in a moſt inſolent manner; ſo as if they had ſet on ſuch Victuals as they had gotten to dreſs it, when it was ready the *Indians* would come and eat it up: and when Night came, when as poſſibly ſome of them had a ſorry Blanket, or ſuch like, to lap themſelves in, the *Indians* would take it, and let the other lye all night in the cold, ſo as their condition was very lamentable; and in the end they were fain to hang one of their Company, whom they could not reclaim from ſtealing, to give the *Indians* content.

Whiles things went on in this manner with them, the Governour and People of *Plimouth* had notice that the Sachem *Maſſaſoiet* their Friend was ſick, and near unto death, and they ſent to viſit him, and ſent him ſome comfortable things, which gave him content, and was a means of his recovery: Upon which occaſion he diſcovered the Conſpiracy of theſe *Indians*, how they were reſolved to cut off Mr. *Weſtons* Company, for the continual Injuries they had done them, and would now take opportunity of their weakneſs, and do it; and for that end had conſpired with other *Indians* their Neighbours thereabouts: and thinking the People here would revenge their death, they therefore thought to do the like by them, therefore to prevent it, and that ſpeedily, by taking ſome of the chief of them before it was too late, for he aſſured them of the truth thereof.

This did much trouble them, and they took it into ſerious conſideration, and found upon Examination, and other Evidences to give light thereinto, That the matter was really ſo as the ſaid *Sachem* had told them. In the mean time came an * *Engliſh-man* from the *Maſſachuſets*, from the ſaid Company in miſery, as hath been above-related, with a ſmall pack at his back; and although he knew not a foot of the way, yet he got

* *This mans name was* Phinehas Pratt, *who hath penned the particular of his perillous Journey, and ſom other things relating to this Tragedy.*

got safe hither, but lost his way, which was well for him, for he was pursued by two *Indians*, who by Gods Providence missed of him by that means; and he related how all things stood with them there, and that he durst stay no longer, for he apprehended by what he observed they would be all slain ere long. This made them make the more haste, and they dispatched a Boat away with some men under the conduct of Captain *Standish*, who found them in a miserable condition; out of which he rescued them, and helped them to some relief, cut off some of the chief Conspirators against them, and according to his Order offered to bring them all to *Plimouth*, to be there untill Mr. *Weston* came, or some other way should be presented for their help: they thanked him and the rest, but they rather desired that he would help them with some Corn, and they would go with their small Ship to the Eastward, to look out for a way for themselves, either to have relief by meeting with Mr. *Weston*, or if not to work with the Fishermen for their supply, and their passage for *England*: so they shipped what they had of any worth, and he helped them with as much Corn as he could, and saw them out of the Bay under sail, and so came home, not taking the worth of a peny of any of them.

This was the end of these that sometimes boasted of their strength, being all able, lusty men, and what they would do and bring to pass, in comparison of the people at *Plimouth*, who had many Women and Children, and weak ones; and said at their first arrival, when they saw the wants at *Plimouth*, That *they would take another course, and not fall into such a condition as this simple people were come to:* but a mans way is not in his own power, God can make the weak to stand: *Let him that thinketh he standeth* (in such respect as well as other) *take heed lest he fall.*

Here see the effect of Pride and Vain-glory.

Shortly after Mr. *Weston* came over with some of the Fishermen, where he heard of the Ruine of his Plantation, and got a Boat, and with a man or two came to see how things were; but by the way (for want of skill) in a Storm he cast away his Boat in the bottome of the Bay, between *Merrimack* and

Paſcataqua, and hardly eſcaped with life; and afterwards fell into the hands of the *Indians*, who pillaged him of all that he had ſaved from the Sea, and ſtripped him of all his Clothes to his Shirt. At laſt he got to *Paſcataqua*, and borrowed a Suit of Clothes, and got means and came to *Plimouth*. A ſtrange alteration there was in him, to ſuch as had ſeen and known him in his former flouriſhing condition; ſo uncertain are all things of this uncertain world.

But to return to the ſtate and condition of the Planters at *Plimouth*, all this while no ſupply heard of, ſo they began to think how they might raiſe as much corn as they could, ſo as they might not languiſh in miſery as formerly they had done, and at the preſent they did, and it was thought the beſt way, and accordingly given way unto, that every one ſhould plant Corn for his own particular, and in that regard provide for themſelves, and in other reſpects continue the general courſe and way as before: & ſo they ranged all their youth under ſome family, and ſet upon ſuch a courſe, which had good ſucceſs, for it made all hands very induſtrious, ſo as much Corn was planted.

This courſe being ſetled, by that time all their Corn was planted, all their victuals was ſpent, and they were only to reſt on Gods providence; many times at night, not knowing where to have any thing to ſuſtain nature the next day, and ſo (as one well obſerved) had need to pray that God would give them their daily bread, above all people in the world; yet they bare thoſe wants with great patience and alacrity of ſpirit, and that for ſo long a time as the moſt part of two years.

In his firſt Decade, *p.* 208. Which brings to minde what *Peter Martyr* writes in magnifying of the *Spaniards*; *They* (ſaid he) *led a miſerable life for five dayes together, with parched grain of Maize only, and that not to ſatiety*; and then concludes, *that ſuch pains, ſuch labours, he thought none living, which is not a* Spaniard, *could have indured.*

But alas, thoſe men when they had *Maize* (that is *Indian Corn*) they thought it as good as a feaſt; and wanted not only for five dayes together, but ſometimes for two or three months together,

together, and neither had bread, nor any kinde of corn.

Indeed in another place in his ſecond *Decade* pag. 94. He mentions *how others of them were worſe put to it, where they were faine to eat* Dogs, Toads *and* dead Men, *and ſo almoſt all of them died.* From theſe extremities the Lord in his goodneſs preſerved both their lives and healths, let his Holy Name have the praiſe; yet let me here make uſe of his concluſion, which in ſome ſort may be applied to this people; *That with their miſeries they opened a way to thoſe new lands: and after ſtorms with what eaſe other men came to inhabit in them, in reſpect of the calamities theſe men ſuffered, ſo as they ſeemed to go to a bride feaſt where all things are provided for them.*

They having one boat left, and ſhee none of the beſt, with a net which they bought, improved them for the taking of Baſſe, which proved a good help to them, and when thoſe failed they were fain all hands to go dig ſhell-fiſh out of the ſands for their living; in the winter ſeaſon ground-nuts and fowl was the principal of their refreſhing, until God ſent more ſetled and ſuitable ſupplies, by his bleſſing upon their induſtry.

At length they received ſome letters from the adventurers, which gave them intelligence of a ſhip ſet out, to come hither unto *Plimouth*, named the *Parragon*; This ſhip was bought by Mr. *John Pierce*, and ſet out on his own charge, upon hopes of great matters; the paſſengers and goods, the Company ſent in her he took in for fraight, for which they agreed with him to be delivered here: this was he in whoſe name their firſt Patent was taken, for this place where *Plimouth* is, by reaſon of acquaintance and ſome allyance that ſome of their friends had with him, but his name was only uſed in truſt; but when he ſaw they were here hopefully ſeated, and by the ſucceſs God gave them, had obtained the favour of the Council of *New-England*, he goes & ſues to the ſaid Council for another Patent of much larger extent in their names, which was eaſily obtained, but he meant to keep it to himſelf, and to allow them what he pleaſed to hold of him as tenants, and ſue to his Courts as chief Lord: but the Lord marvelouſly croſſed him in his proceedings

ceedings; for when his ſhip above-named ſet out from the *Thames*, ſhe ſprang a leak by that time ſhe got to the *Downs*, and alſo by reaſon of a chop that accidentally befel one of her Cables, it brake in a ſtreſs of wind while ſhe there rode, and was in danger to have bin driven on the ſands, and thereupon was conſtrained to return back to *London*, and there arrived in fourteen dayes after, and was haled up into the Dock, and an hundred pound more beſtowed on her to mend her leaks and bruiſes, which ſhe received in the aforeſaid ſtorm; and when ſhe was again fitted for the voyage, he peſtered his ſhip, and takes in more paſſengers, and thoſe ſome of them not very good, to help to bear his loſſes, and ſets out the ſecond time; and when he was half way or thereabouts to *New-England* was forced back again by an extreme tempeſt, wherein the goodneſs and mercy of God appeared in their preſervation, being one hundred and nine ſouls. This ſhip ſuffered the greateſt extremity at ſea, at her ſecond ſetting forth, as is ſeldome the like heard of; It was about the middle of *February* that the ſtorm began, and it continued for the moſt part of fourteen dayes, but for two or three dayes and nights together in moſt violent extremity: at the beginning of the ſtorm, their boat being above-decks, was thrown over-board; they ſpent their Main-maſt, their Round-houſe was beaten off with the ſtorm, and all the upper works of their ſhip: he that ſtood to give direction, for the guiding of her before the ſea, was made faſt, to prevent his waſhing over-board, and the ſeas did ſo over-rake them, as that many times thoſe upon the deck, knew not whether they were within-board or without; and by her extreme leaking, being a very rotten ſhip, and the ſtorm increaſing, ſhe was once very near foundering in the ſea, ſo as they thought ſhe would never riſe again: Notwithſtanding the Lord was pleaſed of his great mercy to preſerve them; and after great weather-beating and extraordinary danger, they arrived ſafe at *Portſmouth* in *Hampſhire*, to the wonderment of all that beheld in what condition they were, and heard what they had endured.

This Relation was made by Mr William Pierce *the Maſter of the ſaid ſhip, and ſome of the paſſengers of good credit.*

Upon the return of the ſaid Mr. *John Pierce* for *England*; (he

(he being personally in this his ship in the so sad storm) the other Merchant Adventurers, got him to assign over the grand-Patent to the Company, which he had taken in his own Name, and made quite void their former Patent.

About the latter end of *June*, came in a ship at *Plimouth* with Captain *Francis West*, who had a Commission to be Admiral of *New-England*, to restrain Interlopers, and such fishing ships as came to fish and trade without licence from the Council of *New-England*, for which they should pay a great sum of money; but he could do no good of them, for they were too strong for him, and he found the fishermen to be refractory, and their owners upon complaint made to the Parliament, procured an order, that fishing should be free. He told the Governour of *Plimouth* that they spake with a ship at sea, and were on board her, that was coming to the said Plantation of *Plimouth*, in which were sundry passengers, and they marvelled she was not arrived, fearing some miscarriage; for they lost her in a storm that fell shortly after they had been on board: which relation filled them full of fears, yet mixed with hope. The Master of this ship had two Hogsheads of Peafe to sell, but seeing their wants, held them at Nine pounds *sterling* an Hogshead, and under Eight he would not take, and yet would have Beaver at an under-rate; but they told him *they had lived so long without, and would do still, rather then give so unreasonably*: so the said Ship went from *Plimouth* to *Virginia*. *This was the ship called the* Paragon *aforesaid.*

About fourteen dayes after came in the Ship called *The Ann*, whereof Mr. *William Pierce* was Master: two of the principal Passengers that came in this Ship were Mr. *Timothy Hatherly* and Mr. *George Morton*; the former, *viz.* Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*, soon after his arrival met with some crosse Providences by the burning of his House, whereby he was much impoverished, and much discouraged, and returned the Winter following for *England*: and afterwards the Lord was pleased to renew his Estate, and he came again into *New-England*, and proved a very profitable and beneficial Instrument both in Church and Common-wealth, being one of the first beginners, and

and a good Inſtrument to uphold the Church and Town of *Situate*; and alſo ſerved God and the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth* in the place of Magiſtracy, and retained his Integrity in the Profeſſion of the wayes of Chriſt unto old Age; ſtill ſurviving at the penning hereof.

The latter of the two fore-named, *viz.* Mr. *George Morton*, was a pious gracious Servant of God, and very faithful in whatſoever publick Imployment he was betruſted withall, and an unfeigned well-willer, & according to his Sphere and Condition, a ſutable Promoter of the Common Good and Growth of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, labouring to ſtill the Diſcontents that ſometimes would ariſe amongſt ſome ſpirits, by occaſion of the Difficulties of theſe new beginnings: but it pleaſed God to put a period to his dayes ſoon after his arrival in *New-England*, not ſurviving a full year after his coming aſhore. With much comfort and peace he fell aſleep in the Lord in the Month of *June*, *Anno* 1624.

About ten dayes after the arrival of the Ship called *The Ann* above-named, there came in another ſmall Ship of about forty four Tun, named the *James*, Mr. *Bridges* being Maſter thereof; which ſaid Ship, the *Ann* had loſt at Sea by reaſon of foul Weather: ſhe was a fine new Veſſel, built to ſtay in the Country. One of the principal Paſſengers that came in her was Mr. *John Jenny*, who was a godly, though otherwiſe a plain man, yet ſingular for publickneſs of ſpirit, ſetting himſelf to ſeek and promote the Common Good of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*; who ſpent not onely his part of this Ship (being part Owner thereof) in the general Concernment of the Plantation, but alſo afterwards was alwayes a Leading-man in promoting the general Intereſt of this Colony: He lived many years in *New-England*, and fell aſleep in the Lord *Anno* 1644. In the two Ships laſt named, came over many other perſons beſides thoſe before recited, who proved of good uſe in their places.

Theſe Paſſengers, ſeeing the low and poor condition of thoſe that were here before them, were much daunted and diſmayed, and

and according to their diverſe humours, were diverſly affected. Some wiſhed themſelves in *England* again; others fell on weeping, fancying their own miſery in what they ſaw in others; other-ſome pitying the diſtreſs they ſaw their Friends had been long in, and ſtill were under. In a word, all were full of ſadneſs; onely ſome of their old Friends rejoyced to ſee them, and that it was no worſe with them, for they could not expect it ſhould be better, and now hoped they ſhould enjoy better dayes together. And truely it was no marvel they ſhould be thus affected, for they were in a very low condition, both in reſpect of Food and Clothing at that time.

To conſider ſeriouſly how ſadly the Scripture ſpeaks of the Famine in *Jacobs* time, when he ſaid to his Sons, *Go, buy us food, that we may live and not die*; and that *the Famine was great and heavy in the Land*, and yet they had great Herds, and ſtore of Cattel of ſundry kindes, which beſides their fleſh, muſt needs produce other uſeful benefits for food, and yet it was accounted a ſore affliction: But the miſery of the Planters at *Plimouth* at the firſt beginning, muſt needs be very great therefore, who not onely wanted the *ſtaff of Bread*, but all the benefits of Cattel, and had no *Egypt* to go to, but God fed them out of the Sea for the moſt part; ſo wonderful is his powerful Providence over his in all Ages: *for his Mercy endureth for ever.*

About the middle of *September* arrived Captain *Robert Gorges* in the Bay of the *Maſſachuſets*, with ſundry Paſſengers and Families, intended there to begin a Plantation, and pitched upon that place which Mr. *Weſton* fore-named had forſaken. He had a Commiſſion from the Council of *New-England* to be General Governour of the Country: and they appointed for his Council and Aſſiſtants, Captain *Francis Weſt* the aforeſaid Admiral, *Chriſtopher Levet* Eſq; and the Governour of *Plimouth* for the time being: Alſo they gave him Authority to Chooſe ſuch other as he ſhould finde fit. Alſo they gave by their Commiſſion *full Power to him and his Aſſiſtants, or any three of them, (whereof himſelf was always to be one) To do and execute*

what to them should seem good, in all Cases, Capital, Criminal, and Civil; with divers other Instructions: Of which, and his Commission, it pleased him to suffer the Governour of *Plimouth* to take a Copy.

He meeting with the aforesaid Mr. *Weston* at *Plimouth*, called him before him and some other of the Assistants, with the Governour of *Plimouth* aforesaid, and charged him with *the ill carriage of his Men at the* Massachusets, *by which means the peace of the Country was disturbed, and himself and the people which he had brought over to plant in that Bay, thereby much prejudiced.* To which the said *Weston* easily answered, *That what was done in that behalf, was done in his absence, and might have befallen any man: He left them sufficiently provided, and conceived they would have been well governed, and for any errour committed, he had sufficiently smarted.*

The said Mr. Tho: Weston *was a man of parts, and a Merchant of good account in* London. *Sometime after these passages he went for* England, *and died in the City of* Bristol; *he proved but a staff of Reed to the Plantation of* Plimouth.

Another particular was, *An abuse done to his father Sir* Ferdinando Gorges, *and to the State.* The thing was this: He used him and others of the Council of *New-England*, to procure him a License for the Transporting of many great Pieces of Ordnance for *New-England*, pretending great Fortification here in the Country; for which when he had obtained, he sold them beyond Sea for his private profit: At which the State was much offended, and his Father suffered a shrewd check, and he had Order to apprehend him.

The said *Weston* excused it as well as he could, but could not wholly deny it: but after much speech about it, by the Mediation of the Governour of *Plimouth*, and some other Friends, the said Captain *Gorges* was inclined to gentleness, (though he apprehended the abuse of his Father deeply) which when the said *Weston* perceived, he grew the more presumptuous, and gave such cutting and provoking speeches, as made the said Captain rise up in great indignation and distemper, vowing, *That he would either curb him, or send him home for* England: At which the said *Weston* was daunted, and came privately to the Governour of *Plimouth*, to know *whether they would suffer him to send him for* England? It was answered him, *They could not hinder*

hinder it: and much blamed him, that after they had pacified things, he ſhould thus break out by his own folly and raſhneſs, and bring trouble upon himſelf and others. He confeſt *it was his paſſion*, and prayed the Governour aforeſaid *to intreat for him, and procure a pacification for him, if he could:* the which at laſt he did obtain with much difficulty. So he was called again, and the ſaid Captain *Gorges* was content to take his own Bond to be ready to to make further anſwer, when either he or the Lords of the Council ſhould ſend for him; and at laſt he took onely his own Word, and ſo there was a friendly parting on all hands.

Soon after this, the ſaid Captain *Gorges* took his leave, and went to the *Maſſachuſets* by land, being very thankful for his kinde Entertainment. His Ship ſtayed at *Plimouth*, and fitted for to go to *Virginia*, having ſome Paſſengers to deliver there: and with her returned ſundry of thoſe from *Plimouth*, which came over on their particular account; ſome out of diſcontent and diſlike of the Country, and others by reaſon of Fire that burnt their Houſes and all their Proviſions, ſo as they were neceſſitated thereunto. This Fire was by ſome of the Seamen, that were Royſtering in an Houſe where it firſt began, making a great Fire, the weather being cold, which brake out of the Chimney into the Thatch, and burnt three Houſes, and conſumed all their Goods and Proviſions. The Houſe in which it began, was right againſt their Store-houſe at *Plimouth*, which they had much ado to ſave; in which was the Common Store of the Proviſions of the Plantation, which had it been loſt, the ſame had been overthrown: but through Gods mercy it was ſaved, by the diligence of the people, and care of the Governour and thoſe about him. Some would have had the Goods thrown out, but if they had, there would have been much loſt by the rude Company belonging to the two fore-named Ships, which were almoſt all on ſhore at this time; but a truſty Company were placed within, as well as ſuch as were mean-while imployed in quenching the Fire without, that if neceſſity required they might have them all out with ſpeed: for they

This was on the fifth of November 1624.

suspected some malicious dealing, if not plain Treachery; and whether it was onely suspected or no, God knows: but this is certain, that when the Tumult was greatest, there was a voice heard (but from whence it came is uncertain) that bade them *look well about them, for all were not friends that were then about them*; and soon after, when the vehemency of the Fire was over, smoke was seen to arise within a Shed that was joyned to the end of the aforesaid Store-house, which was wattled up with boughs, in the withered leaves whereof the fire being kindled, which some running to quench, found a long Fire-brand of about an Ell long, lying under the wall on the inside, which could not come thither by casualty, but must be laid there by some hand, in the judgement of all that saw it. But God kept them from this danger, whatever might be intended.

A very remarkable Preservation.

But to return again to speak something of the aforesaid Captain *Gorges*, after he had been at the Eastward and expedited some occasions there, he and some that depended upon him returned for *England*, having scarcely saluted the Country in his Government, finding the state of things not to answer his quality and condition; his people dispersed themselves, some went for *England*, others for *Virginia*, some few remained, and were helped with supplies from *Plimouth*: amongst the rest, the said Captain brought over a Minister with him, one Mr. *Morrel*, who returned for *England* about a year after him, he took ship at *Plimouth*, and had a certain power and authority of superintendency over other Churches granted him, and instructions for that end; but he never shewed it, or made any use of it, but only spake of it to some of *Plimouth* at his going away. This was in effect the end of the second Plantation, in the aforenamed place called *Wesagusquaset*.

There were also some scattering beginnings made in other places, as at *Pascataqua*, by Mr. *David Thompson*, and at *Monhegin*, and some other places, by sundry others.

1624.

1624.

THe time of new Election of Officers being come for this year at *Plimouth*, the number of their people being increaſed, and their troubles and occaſions therewith; the Governour deſired them to change the perſons, as well as renew the Election, and alſo to adde more Aſſiſtants to the Governour for help and counſel, and the better carrying on of publick affaires, ſhewing that it was neceſſary it ſhould ſo be; for if it were any honour or benefit, it was fit that others ſhould be made partakers of it; if it was a burden (as doubtleſs it was) it was but equal that others ſhould help to bear it, and that this was the end of yearly Elections.

The concluſion was, that whereas there was before but one Aſſiſtant, they now choſe five, giving the Governour a double voice; and afterwards they encreaſed them to ſeven, which courſe hath continued in that Colony until this day.

In the month of *March*, in this year Mr. *Edward Winſlow* arrived at *Plimouth* in *New-England*, having bin imployed as agent for that Plantation, on ſundry occaſions, with the Merchant Adventurers in *England*, who brought a conſiderable ſupply with him, the ſhip being bound on a fiſhing voyage; and with him came Mr. *John Lyford* a Miniſter, which was ſent over by ſome of the Adventurers.

There came over likewiſe in this ſhip three Heifers and a Bull, which was the firſt Neat Cattel that came into *New-England*. *The firſt Neat Cattel that came to* N. E.

The aforeſaid *John Lyford*, when he came firſt on ſhore, ſaluted them of the Plantation of *Plimouth* with that reverence and humility, as is ſeldome to be ſeen; and indeed made them aſhamed, he ſo bowed and cringed unto them, and would have kiſſed their hands if they would have ſuffered him: yea he wept and ſhed many tears, bleſſing God that had brought him to ſee their faces, and admiring the things they had done in their wants, as if he had been made all of love, and the humbleſt

person in the World: but in the end proved more like those
Psal. 10. 10. mentioned by the Psalmist, that crouched and bowed, that heaps
of the poor may fall by them: or like unto dissembling *Ishmael*,
Jer. 41. 6. who when he had slain *Gedaliah*, went out weeping, and met
those that were coming to offer Incense in the house of the
Lord, saying, *Come to Gedaliah*, when he meant to slay them.
They gave him the best entertainment they could, in all simplicity, and as their Governour had used in all weighty affairs, to
consult with their Elder Mr. *Brewster*, together with his Assistants; so now he called Mr. *Lyford* also on such like occasions:
after some short time, he desired to joyn himself a member to
their Church, and was accordingly received; he made a large
confession of his Faith, and an acknowledgement of his former
disorderly walking, and his being intangled with many Corruptions, which had bin a burden to his Conscience, and blessed
God for this oportunity of freedome and liberty, with many
more such like expressions; in some short time he fell into acquaintance with Mr. *John Oldham*, who was a copartner with
him in his after courses; not long after, both *Oldham* and he
grew very perverse, and shewed a spirit of great malignancy,
drawing as many into a faction as they could: were they never
so vile or prophane, they did nourish and abet them in all
their doings, so they would but cleave to them, and speak against the Church: so as there was nothing but private meetings and whisperings amongst them, they feeding themselves
and others, with what they should bring to pass in *England* by
the faction of their * friends there; which brought others as
well as themselves into a fools Paradice, yet they could not carry so closely, but both much of their doings and sayings
were discovered, although outwardly they set a fair face of
things.

* *That is, some of the Adventurers, who proved in the issue Adversaries to the Plantation.*

At length, when the Ship he came in was ready to return for *England*, and it was observed that *Lyford* was long in writing, and sent many Letters, and could not forbear to communicate to his Intimates such things as made them laugh in their sleeves, and thought he had done their errand sufficiently: The Gover nour

vernour and ſome of his friends knowing how things ſtood in reference to ſome known adverſaries in *England*, and what hurt theſe things might do, took a boat and went out with the ſhip, a league or two to ſea, and called for all *Lyfords* and *Oldhams* Letters, Mr. *William Pierce* being Maſter of the ſhip, and knew well their evil dealings, (both in *England* and here) afforded them all the aſſiſtance he could; he found about twenty of *Lyfords* Letters, many of them large, and full of ſlanders and falſe accuſations, tending not only to their prejudice, but ruine and utter ſubverſion; moſt of them they let paſs, only took copies of them, but ſome of the moſt material, they ſent true copies of them and kept the originals, leſt he ſhould deny them, and that they might produce his own hand againſt him; amongſt theſe Letters they found the copies of two Letters, which were ſent in a Letter of his to Mr. *John Pemberton* a Miniſter, and a great oppoſite to the Plantation; theſe two Letters of which he took the copies, were the one of them written by a Gentleman in *England* to Mr. *Brewſter* here, the other by Mr. *Winſlow* to Mr. *Robinſon* in *Holland*; at his coming away, as the ſhip lay at *Graveſend*, they lying ſealed in the great Cabbin, whiles Mr. *Winſlow* was buſie about the affaires of the ſhip, this fly Merchant opens them, takes copies of them, and ſeals them up again, and not only ſeals the copies of them thus, *To his Friend and their Adverſary*, but addes thereto in the Margent many ſcurrilous and flouting Annotations. In the evening the Governour returned, and they were ſomewhat blank at it; but after ſome weeks when they heard nothing, they then were as brisk as ever, thinking nothing had been known, but all was gone currant, and that the Governour went out but to diſpatch his own Letters.

The reaſon why the Governour and the reſt concealed theſe things, was to let things ripen, that they might the better diſcover their intents, and ſee who were their adherents; becauſe among the reſt, they found a Letter of one of their confederates, in which was written, that Mr. *Oldham*, and Mr. *Lyford* intended a reformation in Church and Common-wealth, and as ſoon as

the

the ſhip was gone they intended to joyn together and have the Sacrament; few of *Oldhams* Letters were found in the aforeſaid ſearch, being ſo bad a Scribe as his hand was ſcarce legible, yet he was as deep in the miſchief as the other; and thinking they were now ſtrong enough, they began to pick quarrels at every thing. *Oldham* being called to watch(according to order) refuſeth to come, fell out with the Captain, called him *Raſcall*, and *beggarly Raſcall*, and reſiſted him, and drew his knife at him, though he offered him no wrong, nor gave him any ill terms, but with all fairneſs required him to do his duty; the Governour hearing the tumult, ſent to quiet it; but he ranted with great fury, and called them all *Traitors*: but being committed to Priſon, after a while he came to himſelf, and with ſome ſlight puniſhment was let go upon his behaviour for further Cenſure; but to cut things ſhort, at length it grew to this iſſue, that *Lyford* with his accomplices, without either ſpeaking one word either to the Governour, Church or Elder; withdrew themſelves, and ſet up a publick meeting apart on the Lords-day, with ſundry ſuch inſolent carriages too long here to relate, beginning more publickly to act that which they had been long plotting.

It was now thought high time to prevent further miſchief, to call them to account; ſo the Governour called a Court, and ſummoned the whole company togher, and they charged *Lyford* and *Oldham* with ſuch things as they were guilty of, reſpecting the premiſes; but they were ſtiff, and ſtood reſolutely upon the denial of moſt things, and required proof: they firſt alledged what was writ, compared with their practiſes here; that it was evident they joyned in plotting againſt them, and diſturbed their peace in their Civil and Church-ſtate, which was moſt injurious, for both they and all the world knew they came hither to enjoy the liberty of their Conſciences, in the free uſe of Gods Ordinances, and for that end had ventured their lives, and paſſed through ſo much hardſhip hitherto, and they and their friends had born the charge of theſe beginnings, which was not ſmall, and that he (*viz.*) *Lyford*, for his part was ſent over on this charge,

charge, and both he and his great family was maintained on the same; and for him to plot against them, and seek their ruine, was most unjust and perfideous.

But *Lyford* denied, and made strange of sundry things laid to his charge. Then his Letters were produced, at which he was struck mute. *Oldham* began to be furious, and to rage, because they had intercepted their Letters, provoked the people to Mutiny in such words as these; *My Masters, where are your hearts? now shew your courage: you have often complained to me so and so, now is the time, if you will do any thing, I will stand by you, &c.* thinking that every one knowing his humour that had fooled or flattered him, or otherwise, or that in their Discontent uttered any thing unto him, would now side with him in open Rebellion: But he was deceived, for not a man opened his mouth, all were silent.

Then the Governour took pains in Convicting *Lyford* of his Hypocrisie and Treachery, in abusing his friends, in taking Copies of their Letters in an under-hand way, and sending them abroad to their disgrace, *&c.* and produced them, and his own Letters under his own Hand, which he could not deny, and caused them to be read before all the people; at which all his Confedrates were blank, and had not a word to say. But after awhile he began to say, *That sundry had made some Complaints unto him, and informed him of divers things:* which being there present, and the particulars named to them, they denied.

Then they dealt with him about his Dissembling in the Church, and that he professed to concur with them in all things, and what a large Confession he had made at his admittance; and that he held not himself a Minister, till he had a new Calling, *&c.* and yet now he contested against them, and drew a Company apart, and sequestred himself, and would go about to administer the Sacraments by his former Calling, without ever acquainting them with it. In conclusion he was fully convicted, and burst out into tears, and confest *he feared he was a Reprobate, his sins were so great that he doubted that God would not pardon them, he was unsavoury salt*, &c. and that *he*

had so wronged them, as he could never make them amends; confessing *all he had written against them was false and naught, both for matter and manner:* And all this he did with as much fulness as words and tears could express.

After their Trial and Conviction, the Court sentenced them to be expelled the Plantation; *John Oldham* presently to depart, though his Wife and Family had liberty to stay all Winter, or longer, untill he could make provision to remove them comfortably. *Lyford* had liberty to stay six Months; it was with some eye to his release, if he carried himself well in the mean time, and that his Repentance proved sound. *Lyford* acknowledged his Censure was farre less then he deserved, and afterwards he confessed his sin publickly in the Church with tears, more largely then before. I shall here relate it as I finde it penned by some who took it from his own mouth as himself uttered it.

Acknowledging, *That he had done very evil, and slanderously abused them; and thinking most of the people would take part with him, he thought to have carried all by violence and strong hand against them; and that God might justly lay innocent blood to his charge, for he knew not what hurt might have come by these his Writings, and blessed God that they were stayed; and that he spared not to take knowledge from any of any evil that was spoken, but shut his eyes and ears against all the good; and that if God should make him a Vagabond in the earth, as was* Cain, *it was but just:* and he confessed *three things to be the causes of this his doings, Pride, Vain-glory, and Self-love:* amplifying these Heads with many other expressions in the particulars of them, so as they began to conceive good thoughts of him upon his Repentance, and admitted him to teach amongst them as before; yea sundry tender-hearted persons amongst them were so taken with his signs of Sorrow and Repentance, as they professed they would fall upon their knees to have his Censure remitted and released. But that which made them all stand amazed in the end (and may do all others that shall come to hear the same, for a rarer president can scarcely be named) was, that after two Months time

time all his former Confeſſions, Convictions, and publick Acknowledgements, both in the preſence of God and his Church, and the whole Company, with ſo many Tears, and ſad cenſures of himſelf, he ſhould go again to juſtifie what he had done; for ſecretly he wrote a ſecond Letter to the Adventurers in *England*, in which he juſtified all his former Writings, ſave in ſome things which tended to their damage.

The Copy of this Letter is extant but too Large to be here inſerted.

1625.

AT the time of their Election Court, *John Oldham* came again amongſt them; and though it was a part of his Cenſure for his former Mutiny, *Not to return without leave firſt obtained*, yet he preſumed without leave at all to come, being ſet on and hardened by the ill counſel of others; and not onely ſo, but ſuffered his unruly paſſion to run beyond the bounds and limits of all Reaſon and Modeſty, inſomuch that ſome ſtrangers that were with him were aſhamed of his outrage, and rebuked him: but all Reproofs were but as Oyl to the fire, and made the flame of his choller the greater. He called them all to naught in his fury, an hundred *Rebels* and *Traytors*: but in concluſion, they Committed him untill he was tamer, and then appointed a Guard of Musketeers, which he was to paſs thorow, and every one was ordered to give him a blow on his Hinder-parts with the Butt-end of his Musket, and then he was conveyed to the Water-ſide, where a Boat was ready to carry him away, with this Farewell, *Go and mend your Manners.*

After the removal of his Family, he fell into ſome ſtraights, and about a year after intended a Voyage to *Virginia*: and ſo it pleaſed God, that himſelf and ſundry paſſengers being in the Barque, they were in great danger, ſo as they deſpaired of life, and fell to Prayer, and to Examination of their Hearts and Conſciences, and confeſſed ſuch ſins as moſt burthened them;

and the said *John Oldham* did make a free and large Confeſſion of the wrongs he had done to the Church and People at *Plimouth* in many particulars; that *as he had ſought their Ruine, ſo God had now met with him, and might deſtroy him*; yea, *he feared that they all fared the worſe for his ſake: He prayed God to forgive him*, and made Vows, *That if the Lord ſpared his life, he would become otherwiſe.* This was reported by ſome of good Credit not long ſince living in the *Maſſachuſets* Bay, that were themſelves partners in the ſame danger, which was on the Sholes of *Cape Cod.*

He was a man of parts, but high-ſpirited, and extremely paſſionate, which marred all in point of right improvement of them.

It pleaſed God to ſpare their lives, but they loſt their vayage, and in time afterwards the ſaid Mr. *John Olaham* carried himſelf fairly towards them, and acknowledged the hand of God to be with them, and ſeemed to have an honourable reſpect of them, and ſo far made his peace with them, as he had liberty to go and come at his pleaſure, and in ſome time after went on trading in a ſmall veſſel amongſt the *Indians*, and being weakly manned, upon ſome quarrel betwixt them, they ſlew him with an hatchet: this his death being one ground of the *Pequot* war, of which afterwards in its proper place.

The time being expired that Mr. *John Lyford* his Cenſure was to take place, he was ſo far from anſwering their hopes by amendment, as he had doubled his evil, as before-mentioned: But firſt behold the hand of God concerning him, wherein that of the *Pſalmiſt* is verified, *he hath made a pit and digged it, and is fallen into the pit that he made*: he thought to bring ſhame and diſgrace upon them, but inſtead of that, opens his own to all the world; for his wife who was a prudent ſober woman, taking notice of his falſe and deceitful carriage about the premiſes, in grief of minde expreſſed her fears, that God would bring upon himſelf and his family, ſome ſad judgement for theſe and other his wicked practiſes, and related that he had a *Baſtard* by another woman, before marriage with her, which he denied to her with an oath, but it afterwards appeared to be ſo: and another miſcarriage of the like nature, more odiouſly circumſtanced, was alſo diſcovered, for which he was forced to leave *Ireland*;

Pſal. 7. 15.

and

and ſo came *New-England* to be troubled with him. Being baniſhed hence, he went firſt to *Nantasket*, then to *Salem*, and after to *Virginia*, where he ſhortly after died.

I have been too tedious in my relating the plots of theſe wicked *Machavillians*: But to conclude, the Reader may take notice, that God obſerved and brought to nought their wicked devices, was a defence to the innocent, and caught them in the ſnares they privily layed for them, puniſhing one ſin by another, until he had accompliſhed the freedom of his *Iſrael*, by the overthrow of his and their enemies; for which his mercy, let his holy Name be praiſed for evermore.

This ſtorm thus blown over, yet ſundry ſad effects followed, for the company of the Merchant Adventurers brake in pieces hereupon, and the greateſt part wholly deſerted the Colony, but yet God took care of it; for although ſundry of them fell off and adventured no more towards the ſupport thereof, but rather proved manifeſt adverſaries thereunto then otherwiſe: and the reſt, partly becauſe they were grown (ſome of them) low in their eſtates, and there being ſmall hopes of returns to their expectations; although courteous in words and well wiſhes, yet afforded little or no help after this, ſo that the Plantation was fain to ſtand on their own legs, being indeed marvellouſly ſupported by the Lord, for it pleaſed him ſo to bleſs their endeavours, as that they raiſed great crops of *Indian Corn* (about this time) ſo as they had enough, and to ſpare, and began to have thoughts of improving part of it in a way of trading with the *Indians*, and having only two ſhallops, and no bigger veſſels, they laid a deck on the one of them in the midſhips, to preſerve the corn dry from weather, & ſo ſent her laden with corn to a place call'd *Kenebek*, about fifty leagues off to the Eaſtwards: and notwithſtanding they were ſtrangers to the way, and place of trade, and to the people, and having no ſeamen to go with them, and at that ſeaſon, being the latter end of the year and drawing on to winter; yet it pleaſed God to preſerve them, and ſo to bleſs their endeavours, as that they returned in ſafety, and with good ſucceſs, it being the firſt enterprife they atchieved

in this kind (at least) so far, and it proved an inlet to a further trade, which was greatly beneficial to them afterwards.

And here I may not omit the observable dispensation of Gods providence, respecting his dealing with the Adventurers forementioned, in reference unto two ships they sent unto these parts about that time, on a fishing voyage only upon their own account, having left the Plantation to shift for themselves; one of these ships was a small one (*viz.*) the *James* forenamed, which was well laden with good *Cor fish*, and in her a great quantity likewise of *Beaver* and other furs, which was sent by the Plantation to the Adventurers, and returned for *England*: the other ship was also laden with good *dry fish*, and she also returned with her; being thus well fraighted, they went together lovingly and joyfully away, the greater ship towing the lesser at her stern all the way over-bound, and had such fair weather, as they never cast her off, till they were shot deep into the *English Chanel*, almost within sight of *Plimouth*, and yet there she was unhappily taken by a *Turks-man* of war, & carried into *Sally*, where the Master and Men were made Slaves, and many of the Beaver-skins were sold for four pence a piece. Thus were all their hopes dashed in this respect, and the joyfull News they went to carry home, turned into heavy Tidings. Some thought this a Hand of God for some unkindness shewed to the Plantation, by exaction upon them in reference to a parcel of goods they a little before had sent over to them on extreme Rates: But Gods Judgements are unsearchable, neither ought we to be too bold therewith. But however, it shews us the uncertainty of all humane things, and what little cause there is in joying in them, or trusting to them.

800 weight of Beaver, with other Furres a good quantity.

In the bigger of these Ships Captain *Miles Standish* went over as Agent in the behalf of the Plantation, in reference unto some particulars yet depending betwixt them and the Adventurers; as also to the Honourable Council of *New-England:* and notwithstanding some Difficulty he met with in his occasions, by reason of the Pestilence which was then so hot in the City of *London*, yet he accomplished his business so, as

he

he left things in a fair way for future Compoſition betwixt the ſaid Merchant-Adventurers and the Plantation: and he ſpake alſo with ſome of the Honourable Council afore-named, who promiſed all helpfulneſs to the Plantation that lay in them. About this time it pleaſed the Lord likewiſe to give them peace, health, and good ſucceſs on their endeavours, his holy Name be praiſed.

1626.

ABout the beginning of *April*, they heard of Captain *Standiſh* his arrival, and ſent a boat to fetch him home; welcome he was, but the news he brought was ſad in many regards, not only in regard of the forementioned loſſes which their friends had ſuffered, and ſome of them dead of the *Plague*, but alſo that Mr. *John Robinſon* their Paſtor was dead, which ſtruck them with much ſorrow and ſadneſs, as they had great cauſe: his and their adverſaries, had been long and continually plotting, how they might hinder his coming into *New-England*, but now the Lord had appointed him to go a greater journey, at leſs charge, to a better place. *Mr.* John Robinſon's *death.*

But before I paſs things concerning this Worthy Servant of Chriſt Mr. *John Robinſon*, I ſhall here inſert the honourable teſtimony that Mr. *William Bradford* ſenior hath left behinde him, concerning him, being greatly acquainted with his worth and excellency.

Saith he, *ſuch was the mutual love and reciprocal reſpect that this worthy man had to his flock, and his flock to him, that it might be ſaid of them, as it was once of that famous* Emperour Marcus Aurelius *and the people of* Rome, *That it was hard to judge whether he delighted more in having ſuch a People, or they in having ſuch a Paſtor.* But to return.

Captain *Standiſh* likewiſe brought the ſad news of the death of Mr. *Robert Cuſhman*, their ancient friend, whom the Lord took *The death of Mr.* Robert Cuſhman.

took away alſo this year (about the ſame time) who was as their right hand with their friends the Adventurers, and for divers years had done and agitated all their buſineſs with them to their great advantage, of whom occaſionally there hath been honourable mention formerly made in this Book.

About this time they received divers Letters from their friends at *Leyden* in *Holland*, full of ſad lamentation for their heavy loſs by the death of their Paſtor Mr. *Robinſon* abovenamed; and although their wills were good to come over to their brethren in *New-England*, yet they ſaw no probability of means how it might be effected, but concluded (as it were) that all their hopes was cut off, and many being aged, began to drop away by death. All which things before related, being well weighed and laid together, it could not but ſtrike them with great perplexity, and to look humanely on the ſtate of things as they preſented themſelves at this time, it is a marvel it did not wholly diſcourage and ſink them, but they gathered up their ſpirits, and the Lord ſo helped them (whoſe work they had in hand) as now when they were very low, they began to riſe again; and being ſtripped (in a manner) of all humane helps and hopes, he brought things about otherwiſe in his divine Providence, ſo as they were not only upheld and ſuſtained, but their proceedings both honoured and imitated by others, as by the ſequel will appear.

1627.

THis Year they ſent Mr. *Iſaac Allerton* for *England*, and gave him order to make a Compoſition with the Adventurers, in reference unto ſome particulars betwixt the Plantation and them, which Captain *Standiſh* had begun, as is before hinted, and at the ordinary ſeaſon of the year (for the expectation of ſhips) he returned with ſome ſucceſs in the buſineſs he was imployed in.

Likewiſe

Likewise this Year they began to make some distribution of Lands, having had hitherto but to every person one Acre allowed him as to propriety, besides their Home-steads, or Garden-plots; the reason was that they might keep together, both for more safety and defence, and the better Improvement of the general Imployments: which condition of theirs brings to minde that which may be read in *Pliny* of the *Romans* first beginnings in *Romulus* time, how every man contented himself with two Acres of Land, and had no more assigned them: and *Chap.* 3. *It was thought a great Reward to receive at the hands of the People of* Rome *a Pinte of Corn*; and long after, *the greatest Present given to a Captain that had got a Victory over their Enemies, was as much ground as he could Till in one day*; and *he was not accounted a good, but a dangerous man, that would not content himself with seven Acres of Land*; as also *how they did pound their Corn in Mortars*, as these people were forced to do many years before they could get a Mill. *Pliny, lib. 18. Chap. 2.*

Notwithstanding as abovesaid, so small a portion of Land served them at the first, yet afterwards for divers Reasons moving thereunto, they were necessitated to lay out some larger Proportions to each person; yet resolving to keep such a *mean* in distribution of Lands, as should not hinder their growth by others coming to them, and therefore accordingly allotted to every one in each Family Twenty Acres to be laid out, five Acres in breadth by the Water-side, and four Acres in length.

I may not omit the inserting of a particular that fell out this year, in reference unto a Ship with many Passengers in her, and some considerable goods, which was bound for *Virginia*, who had lost themselves at Sea, either by the insufficiency of the Master, or his illness (for he was sick, and lame of the *Scurvy*, so as he could but lye in the Cabbin-door and give direction, and (it should seem) was badly assisted either with Mate or Marriners) or else the fear of, and the unrulinesse of the Passengers was such, as they made them steer a Course between the Southwest and Northwest, that they might fall with some

Land, whatever it was they cared not, for they had been six weeks at Sea and had no Beer, nor Water, nor Wood left, but had burnt up all their empty Cask, onely one of the Company had a Hogshead of Wine or two, which was also almost spent, so as they feared they should be starved at Sea, or consumed with Diseases, which made them run this desperate Course. But it pleased God, that although they came so near the Sholes of *Cape Cod*, or else ran stumbling over them in the night they knew not how, they came before a small Harbour that lieth about the middle of *Mannamoiet Bay*, to the Southward of *Cape Cod*, and with a small gale of wind, and about a high water, touched upon a Barre of Sand that lieth before it, but had no hurt, the Sea being smooth so they laid out an Anchor; but towards Evening the wind sprang up at Sea, and was so rough as brake their Cable, and beat them over the Barre into the Harbour, where they saved their Lives and Goods: for although with much beating they had sprung a butt-end of a Plank, yet they soon got over, and ran upon a dry Flatt within the Harbour close to a Beach, and at a low water got out their Goods, and were not a little glad that they had saved their Lives. But when they had refreshed themselves, not knowing where they were, nor what to do, were much troubled, but soon after saw some *Indians* come towards them in Canooes, which made them stand upon their guard, but when they heard some of them speak *English*, they were not a little revived; especially when they heard them ask whether they were not the Governour of *Plimouths* Men, or Friends, and that they would bring them to the *English* houses, or carry their Letters: and when they had feasted these *Indians*, and given them many gifts, they sent two men and a Letter with them to the Governour of *Plimouth*, by which he had intelligence of their condition, and took order for their supply: they hoping by mending of their Ship to recover her to go to Sea again, and accordingly did mend her, but afterwards having but bad Moring, was put on shore again, and suffered so much shipwrack as she never got off more, but all the Company

pany were forced to repair to *Plimouth*, where they continued the best part of a year, being courteously entertained, and so were dispersed: The greatest part of them went to *Virginia*, and some remained in the Country. The chief amongst them were Mr. *Fells*, Mr. *Sibsey*, and the Masters Name was *Johnston* a Scotsman.

The Dutch had trading in these Southern parts divers years before the English came, but they began no Plantation until after the English came, and were here seated.

This Year the Plantation of *Plimouth* received Messages from the *Dutch* Plantation, sent unto them from the Governour there, written both in *Dutch* and *French*: The sum of the Letters forementioned were, To Congratulate the *English* here, taking notice of much that might engage them to a friendly Correspondency and good Neighbourhood, as, The propinquity of their Native Country, Their long continued Friendship, *&c.* and desired to fall into a way of some Commerce and Trade with them.

To which the Governour and Council of *Plimouth* returned answerable courteous acceptance of their loving Propositions, respecting their good Neighbourhood in general, and particularly for Commerce: And accordingly the *Dutch* not long after sent their Secretary Mr. *Isaac de Rosier* with Letters and goods, who laid the foundation of a Trade that continued between them many years after, to their mutual benefit. They also brought the *English* acquainted with the trading of *Wampampeag*, untill then little known to us, nor esteemed by us, but was after of good valuation, and profitable. Although for the space of 20 years it was of great esteem amongst the Natives in divers parts of the Country, so as it made the *Indians* in these parts Rich, Proud and Powerful; yet untill they had store of it, they could not attain *English* Ammunition, but were fain to improve their own Artillery of Bowes and Arrows: But when as they learned to make store of *Wampam*, they furnished themselves with Guns, Powder and Shot, which no Laws can restrain, by reason of the baseness of sundry unworthy persons, both *English*, *Dutch* and *French*, which may turn to the ruine of many: for hitherto the *Indians* of these parts had no Pieces, nor other Arms but their Bowes and Arrows and Clubs,

nor of many years after; neither durſt they ſcarce handle a Gun, though out of kelter, it was a terrour to them: but thoſe *Indians* to the Eaſtern parts which had Commerce with the *French*, got Pieces of them, and they in the end made a common Trade of it; and in time our *Engliſh* Fiſhermen, led with the like Covetouſneſs, followed their example for their own gain: but upon Complaint againſt them, it pleaſed the Kings Majeſty to prohibit the ſame by a ſtrict Proclamation, Commanding *that no ſort of Arms or Ammunition ſhould by any of His Subjects be Traded with them.*

1628.

THis Year died Mr. *Richard Warren*, who hath been mentioned before in this Book, and was an uſeful Inſtrument, and during his life bare a deep ſhare in the Difficulties and Troubles of the firſt Settlement of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth.*

This Gentlemans name is here occaſionally uſed, & although he came over in year 1625. yet theſe paſſages in reference to Morton fell out about this year, and therefore referred to this place.

Whereas about three years before this time there came over one Captain *Wollaſton*, a man of conſiderable parts, and with him three or four more of ſome Eminency, who brought with them a great many Servants, with Proviſions, and other Requiſites for to begin a Plantation, and pitched themſelves in a place within the *Maſſachuſets Bay*, which they called afterwards by their Captains Name, *Mount Wollaſton*; which place is ſince called by the Name of *Braintry*. And amongſt others that came with him, there was one Mr. *Thomas Morton*, who it ſhould ſeem had ſome ſmall Adventure of his own or other mens amongſt them, but had little reſpect, and was ſlighted by the meaneſt Servants they kept. They having continued ſome time in *New-England*, and not finding things to anſwer their Expectation, nor Profit to ariſe as they looked for, the ſaid Captain *Wollaſton* takes a great part of the Servants, and tranſports them to *Virginia*, and diſpoſed of them there, and writes back

back to one Mr. *Raſdale*, one of his chief partners, (& accounted their Merchant) to bring another part of them to *Virginia* likewiſe, intending to put them off there, as he had done the reſt; and he with the conſent of the ſaid *Raſdale*, appointed one whoſe Name was *Filcher* to be his Lieutenant, and to govern the remainder of the Plantation, untill he or *Raſdale* ſhould take further order thereabout.

But the aforeſaid *Morton* (having more craft then honeſty) having been a *Petty-fogger* at *Furnivals Inne*; he in the others abſence watches an opportunity (Commons being but hard among them) and got ſome ſtrong drink, and other junkets, and made them a feaſt, and after they were merry, he began to tell them he would give them good Counſel: you ſee (ſaith he) that many of your fellows are carried to *Virginia*, and if you ſtay ſtill until *Raſdales* return, you will alſo be carried away and ſold for ſlaves with the reſt; therefore I would adviſe you to thruſt out this Lieutenant *Filcher*, and I having a part in the Plantation, will receive you as my partners and conſociates, ſo may you be free from ſervice, and we will Converſe, Plant, Trade and live together as equals (or to the like effect) This counſel was eaſily followed, ſo they took opportunity, and thruſt Lieutenant *Filcher* out of doors, and would not ſuffer him to come any more amongſt them, but forced him to ſeek bread to eat, and other neceſſaries amongſt his neighbours, till he could get paſſage for *England*.

See the ſad Effects of the want of good Government.

After this they fell to great licentiouſneſs of life, in all prophaneſs, and the ſaid *Morton* became Lord of miſrule, and maintained (as it were) a ſchool of *Atheiſm*, and after they had got ſome goods into their hands, and got much by trading with the *Indians*, they ſpent it as vainly, in quaffing and drinking both Wine and ſtrong Liquors, in great exceſs (as ſome have reported) *Ten pounds worth* in a Morning, ſetting up a *May-pole*, drinking and dancing about it, and friſking about it, like ſo many *Fairies* or *Furies* rather, yea and worſe practiſes, as if they had anew revived and celebrated the feaſt of the *Romans* Goddeſs *Flora*, or the beaſtly practiſes of the mad *Bacchanalians*.

lians. The ſaid *Morton* likewiſe to ſhew his Poetry, compoſed ſundry Rythmes and Verſes, ſome tending to laciviouſneſs, and others to the detraction and ſcandal of ſome perſons names, which he affixed to his Idle or Idol *May-pole*: they changed alſo the name of their place, and inſtead of calling it *Mount Wollaſton*, they called it the *Merry Mount*, as if this jollity would have laſted alwayes. But this continued not long, for ſhortly after, that Worthy Gentleman Mr. *John Endicot*, who brought over a Patent under the Broad Seal of *England* for the Government of the *Maſſachuſets*, viſiting theſe parts, cauſed that *May-pole* to be cut down, and rebuked them for their prophaneſs, and admoniſhed them to look to it that they walked better; ſo the name was again changed, and called *Mount Dagon*.

Now to maintain this riotous Prodigality and profuſe expence, the ſaid *Morton* thinking himſelf lawleſs, and hearing what gain the Fiſhermen made of trading of Pieces, Powder and Shot; he as head of this conſortſhip, began the practice of the ſame in theſe parts: and firſt he taught the *Indians* how to uſe them, to charge and diſcharge them, and what proportion of powder to give the Piece, according to the ſize or bigneſs of the ſame, and what ſhot to uſe for Fowl, and what for Deer: and having thus inſtructed them, he imployed ſome of them to Hunt and Fowl for him; ſo as they became ſomewhat more active in that imployment then any of the *Engliſh*, by reaſon of their ſwiftneſs of foot, and nimbleneſs of body, being alſo quick-ſighted, and by continual exerciſe, well knowing the haunt of all ſorts of game; ſo as when they ſaw the execution that a Piece would do, and the benefit that might come by the ſame, they became very eager after them, and would not ſtick to give any price they could attain to for them; accounting their Bows and Arrows but babies in compariſon of them.

And here we may take occaſion to bewail the miſchief which came by this wicked man, and others like unto him; in that notwithſtanding all laws, for the reſtraint of ſelling Ammunition to the *Natives*, that ſo far baſe covetouſneſs prevailed, and doth ſtill prevail, as that the *Salvages* become amply furniſhed with Guns,

Guns, Powder, Shot, Rapiers, Piſtols, and alſo well-skilled in repairing of defective Arms: yea ſome have not ſpared to tell them how Gun-powder is made, and all the materials in it, and that they are to be had in their own Land; and would (no doubt, in caſe they could attain to the making of *Salt-Peter*) teach them to make Powder: and what miſchief may fall out unto the *Engliſh* in theſe parts thereby, let this peſtilent fellow *Morton* (aforenamed) bear a great part of the blame and guilt of it to future Generations. But leſt I ſhould hold the *Reader* too long in the relation of the particulars of his vile actings; when as the *Engliſh* that then lived up and down about the *Maſſachuſets*, and in other places, perceiving the ſad conſequences of his trading, ſo as the *Indians* became furniſhed with the *Engliſh* Arms & Ammunition, and expert in the improving of them, and fearing they ſhould at one time or another get a blow thereby; and alſo taking notice, that if he were let alone in his way, they ſhould keep no ſervants for him, becauſe he would entertain any how vile ſoever: Sundry of the chief of the ſtraggling Plantations met together, and agreed by mutual conſent to ſend to *Plimouth*, who were then of more ſtrength to joyn with them, to ſuppreſs this miſchief: who conſidering the particulars propoſed to them to joyn together to take ſome courſe with him, and finding them weighty, agreed together to take ſome ſpeedy courſe, to prevent (if it might be) the evil that was accrewing towards them; and reſolved firſt to admoniſh him of his wickedneſs reſpecting the premiſes, laying before him the injury he did to their common ſafety, and that his acting concerning the ſame, was againſt the Kings Proclamation: but he inſolently perſiſted on in his way, and ſaid, *the King was dead, and his diſpleaſure with him, and threatned them that if they came to moleſt him, they ſhould look to themſelves*; ſo that they ſaw there was no way but to take him by force: ſo they reſolved to proceed in ſuch a way, and obtained of the Governour of *Plimouth*, to ſend Captain *Standiſh* and ſome other aid with him, to take the ſaid *Morton* by force, the which accordingly was done; but they found him to ſtand ſtifly on his

his defence, having made fast his doors, armed his Consorts, set Powder and Shot ready upon the Table; scoffed and scorned at them, and he and his Complices being filled with strong drink, were desperate in their way: but he himself coming out of doors to make a shot at Captain *Standish*, he stepping to him, put by his Piece and took him, and so little hurt was done; and so he was brought Prisoner to *Plimouth*, and continued in durance until an opportunity of sending him for *England*, which was done at their common charge, and Letters also with him, to the honourable Council for *New-England*, and returned again into the Country in some short time, with less punishment then his demerits deserved (as was apprehended.)

The Year following he was again apprehended, and sent for *England*, where he lay a considerable time in *Exeter Goal*: for besides his miscarriage here in *New-England*, he was suspected to have murthered a man that had ventured monies with him, when he came first into *New-England*; and a warrant was sent over from the *Lord Chief Justice* to apprehend him, by virtue whereof, he was by the Governour of the *Massachusets* sent into *England*, and for other of his misdemeanors amongst them in that Government, they demolished his House, that it might no longer be a roost for such unclean Birds: Notwithstanding he got free in *England* again, and wrote an Infamous and Scurrilous Book against many godly and chief men of the Country, full of lies and slanders, and full fraught with prophane calumnies against their Names and Persons, and the wayes of God. But to the intent I may not trouble the Reader any more with mentioning of him in this History: In fine, sundry years after he came again into the Country, and was imprisoned at *Boston* for the aforesaid Book and other things, but denied sundry things therein, affirming his Book was adulterated. And soon after being grown old in wickedness, at last ended his life at *Pascataqua*. But I fear I have held the Reader too long about so unworthy a person, but hope it may be useful to take notice how wickedness was beginning, and would have further proceeded, had it not been prevented timely.

1629.

1629.

THis Year fundry Ships came out of *England*, and arrived at *Neumkeak*, where Mr. *John Endicot* had chief Command; and by infection that grew amongst the Paſſengers at Sea, it ſpread alſo among them on ſhore, of which many died, ſome of the *Scurvy*, and other of infectious *Feavers*. Mr. *Endicot* underſtanding that there was one at *Plimouth* that had skill in ſuch Diſeaſes, ſent thither for him; at whoſe Requeſt he was ſent unto them: And afterwards, acquaintance and Chriſtian love and Correſpondency came on betwixt the ſaid Governour, and the ſaid Mr. *Endicot*; which was furthered by Congratulatory Letters that paſſed betwixt each other: one whereof, becauſe it ſhews the beginning of their Chriſtian fellowſhip, I ſhall here inſert. *Now called* Salem.

The Copy of a Letter from Mr. *Endicot* to Mr. *Bradford*, as followeth.

Right Worſhipfull Sir,

A Letter from Mr. Endicot *to Mr.* Bradford.

IT is a thing not uſuall, that Servants to one Maſter, *and of the ſame Houſhold, ſhould be ſtrangers; I aſſure you I deſire it not: nay, to ſpeak more plainly, I cannot be ſo tŏ you. Gods People are all marked with one and the ſame mark, and have for the main one and the ſame heart, guided by one and the ſame Spirit of Truth; and where this is, there can be no diſcord, nay here muſt needs be a ſweet harmony: and the ſame requeſt (with you) I make unto the Lord, that we as Chriſtian Brethren be united by an heavenly and unfeigned love, bending all our hearts and forces in furthering a Work beyond our ſtrength, with reverence and fear, faſtning*

ning our eyes alwayes on him that is onely able to direct and prosper all our wayes. I acknowledge my self much bound to you for your kinde love and care in sending Mr. Fuller *amongst us, and rejoyce much that I am by him satisfied touching your judgement of the Outward Form of Gods Worship: It is (as farre as I can gather) no other then is warranted by the Evidence of Truth, and the same which I have professed and maintained ever since the Lord in mercy revealed himself unto me, being farre from the common Report that hath been spread of you touching that particular: but Gods children must not look for less here below; and it is a great mercy of God that he strengtheneth them to go through it. I shall not need at this time to enlarge unto you, for (God willing) I purpose to see your face shortly: in the mean time I humbly take my leave of you, committing you to the Lords blessing and protection, and rest*

Neumkeak, *May* 11. 1629. *Your assured loving Friend,*

JOHN ENDICOT.

In the three Ships that came over this year to *Salem* in the Month of *June*, besides many godly Christians, there came over three Ministers; two of them, Mr. *Skelton* and Mr. *Higginson*, were Non-conformists, who having suffered much in their Native Land upon that account, they came over with a professed intention of practising Church-Reformation: the third Minister Mr. *Bright* was a Conformist, who not agreeing in judgement with the other two, he removed to *Charlstown*, where also not agreeing with those godly Christians there that were for Reformation, after one years stay in the Country he returned for *England*. But Mr. *Higginson* and Mr. *Skelton*, in pursuance of the ends of their coming over into this Wilderness, acquainted the Governour Mr. *Endicot*, and the rest of the godly People whom they found Inhabitants of the place, and

and the chief of the Paſſengers that came over with them, with their profeſſed intentions, and conſulted with them about ſetling a Reformed Congregation; from whom they found a general and hearty Concurrence, ſo that after ſome Conference together about this matter, they pitched upon the 6th of *Auguſt* for their entring into a ſolemn Covenant with God, and one another, and alſo for the Ordaining of their Miniſters; of which they gave notice to the Church of *Plimouth* (that being the onely Church that was in the Country before them) the people made choice of Mr. *Skelton* for their Paſtor, and Mr. *Higginſon* for their Teacher. And accordingly it was deſired of Mr. *Higginſon* to draw up a Confeſſion of Faith and Covenant in Scripture-language; which being done, was agreed upon. And becauſe they foreſaw that this Wilderneſs might be looked upon as a place of Liberty, and therefore might in time be troubled with erroneous ſpirits, therefore they did put in one Article into the *Confeſſion of Faith* on purpoſe about *the Duty and Power of the Magiſtrate in Matters of Religion.* Thirty Copies of the foreſaid *Confeſſion of Faith* and *Covenant* being written out for the uſe of thirty perſons who were to begin the Work. When the ſixth of *Auguſt* came, it was kept as a day of Faſting and Prayer, in which after the Sermons and Prayers of the two Miniſters, in the end of the day, the foreſaid *Confeſſion of Faith* and *Covenant* being ſolemnly read, the forenamed perſons did ſolemnly profeſs their Conſent thereunto: and then proceeded to the Ordaining of Mr. *Skelton* Paſtor, and Mr. *Higginſon* Teacher of the Church there. Mr. *Bradford* the Governour of *Plimouth*, and ſome others with him, coming by Sea, were hindred by croſs winds that they could not be there at the beginning of the day, but they came into the Aſſembly afterward, and gave them the *right hand of fellowſhip*, wiſhing all proſperity, and a bleſſed ſucceſs unto ſuch good beginnings. After which, at ſeveral times many others joyned to the Church in the ſame way. The *Confeſſion of Faith* and *Covenant* forementioned, was acknowledged onely as a Direction pointing unto that Faith and Covenant contained

in the holy Scripture, and therefore no man was confined unto that form of words, but onely to the Substance, End and Scope of the matter contained therein: And for the Circumstantial manner of joyning to the Church, it was ordered according to the wisdome and faithfulness of the Elders, together with the liberty and ability of any person. Hence it was, that some were admitted by expressing their Consent to that written *Confession of Faith* and *Covenant*; others did answer to questions about the Principles of Religion that were publickly propounded to them; some did present their Confession in writing, which was read for them; and some that were able and willing, did make their Confession in their own words and way: A due respect was also had unto the Conversations of men, *viz.* that they were without Scandal. But some of the Passengers that came over at the same time, observing that the Ministers did not at all use the Book of *Common-Prayer*, and that they did administer Baptism and the Lords Supper without the Ceremonies, and that they professed also to use Discipline in the Congregation against scandalous persons, by a personal application of the Word of God as the case might require, and that some that were scandalous were denied admission into the Church, they began to raise some trouble: of these Mr. *Samuel Brown* and his Brother were the chief; the one being a Lawyer, the other a Merchant, both of them amongst the number of the first Patentees, men of Estates, and men of Parts and port in the place. These two Brothers gathered a Company together in a place distinct from the publick Assembly, and there sundry times the Book of *Common-Prayer* was read unto such as resorted thither. The Governour Mr. *Endicot* taking notice of the disturbance that began to grow amongst the people by this means, he convented the two Brothers before him. They accused the Ministers as *departing from the Orders of the Church of England, that they were Separatists, and would be Anabaptists, &c. but for themselves, they would hold to the Orders of the Church of England.* The Ministers answered for themselves, *They were neither* Separatists *nor* Anabaptists,

they

they did not separate from the Church of England, *nor from the Ordinances of God there, but onely from the Corruptions and Disorders there*; and *that they came away from the Common-Prayer and Ceremonies, and had ſuffered much for their Non-Conformity in their Native Land, and therefore being in a place where they might have their liberty, they neither could nor would uſe them, becauſe they judged the impoſition of theſe things to be ſinful Corruptions in the Worſhip of God.* The Governour and Council, and the generality of the people, did well approve of the Miniſters Anſwer: and therefore finding thoſe two Brothers to be of high Spirits, and their ſpeeches and practiſes tending to Mutiny and Faction, the Governour told them, *That* New-England *was no place for ſuch as they*; and therefore he ſent them both back for *England* at the return of the Ships the ſame year: and though they breathed out Threatnings both againſt the Governour and Miniſters there, yet the Lord ſo diſpoſed of all, that there was no further inconvenience followed upon it.

The two Miniſters there being ſeriouſly ſtudious of Reformation, they conſidered of the ſtate of their Children, together with their Parents; concerning which, Letters did paſs between Mr. *Higginſon*, and Mr. *Brewſter* the reverend Elder of the Church of *Plimouth*, and they did agree in their judgements, *viz.* concerning the *Church-Membership* of the Children with their parents, and that Baptiſm was a ſeal of their *Membership*, only when they were Adult, they being not ſcandalous, they were to be examined by the *Church-Officers*, and upon their approbation of their fitneſs, and upon the Childrens publick and perſonal owning of the Covenant, they were to be received unto the Lords Supper. Accordingly Mr. *Higginſon's* eldeſt Son, being about fifteen years of age, was owned to have been received a member together with his Parents, and being privately examined by the Paſtor Mr. *Skelton*, about his knowledge in the principles of Religion, he did preſent him before the Church when the Lords Supper was to be Adminiſtred, and the Childe then publickly and perſonally owning the Covenant of

the God of his Father, he was admitted unto the Lords Supper: it being then professedly owned, according to 1 *Cor.* 7. 14. that the Children of the Church are holy unto the Lord as well as their Parents, accordingly the Parents owning and retaining the Baptism, which they themselves received in their Infancy, in their Native Land, as they had any Children born, Baptism was administred unto them, *viz.* to the Children of such as were members of that particular Church.

Mr. *Higginson* lived but one year after the setling of the Church there, departed this life about the same time the next year, in the Month of *August*, 1630. Mr. *Skelton* lived until the year 1634. when he also quietly slept in the Lord, and were both buried at *Salem*. As it is an honour to be in Christ before others, as in *Rom.* 16. so also to be first in the Lords work, and to be faithful in it, as these two holy men were; who made such a beginning in *Church-reformation*, as was afterwards followed by many others.

In the year 1634. Mr. *Roger Williams* removed from *Plimouth* to *Salem*: he had lived about three years at *Plimouth*, where he was well accepted as an assistant in the Ministry to Mr. *Ralph Smith*, then Pastor of the Church there, but by degrees venting of divers of his own singular opinions, and seeking to impose them upon others, he not finding such a concurrence as he expected, he desired his dismission to the Church of *Salem*, which though some were unwilling to, yet through the prudent counsel of Mr. *Brewster* (the ruling Elder there) fearing that his continuance amongst them might cause divisions, and there being then many able men in the Bay, they would better deal with him then themselves could, and foreseeing (what he professed he feared concerning Mr. *Williams*, which afterwards came to pass) that he would run the same course of rigid Separation and Anabaptistry, which Mr. *John Smith* the Sebaptist at *Amsterdam* had done; the Church of *Plimouth* consented to his dismission, and such as did adhere to him were also dismissed, and removed with him, or not long after him to *Salem*. He came to *Salem* in the time of Mr. *Skeltons* weakness,

who

who lived not long after Mr. *Williams* was come, whereupon after ſome time, the Church there called him to office; but he having in one years time, filled that place with principles of rigid ſeparation, and tending to Anabaptiſtry, the prudent Magiſtrates of the *Maſſachuſets* Juriſdiction, ſent to the Church of *Salem*, deſiring them to forbear calling him to office, which they not hearkening to, was a cauſe of much diſturbance; for Mr. *Williams* had begun, and then being in office, he proceeded more vigorouſly to vent many dangerous opinions, as amongſt many others theſe were ſome; *That it is not lawful for an unregenerate man to pray, nor to take an Oath, and in ſpecial, not the Oath of Fidelity to the Civil Government; nor was it lawful for a godly man to have communion either in Family Prayer, or in an Oath with ſuch as they judged unregenerate*: and therefore he himſelf refuſed the Oath of Fidelity, and taught others ſo to do: alſo, *That it was not lawful ſo much as to hear the godly Miniſters of England, when any occaſionally went thither*, & therefore he admoniſhed any *Church-members* that had done ſo, as for hainous ſin: alſo he ſpake dangerous words againſt the Patent, which was the foundation of the Government of the *Maſſachuſets* Colony: alſo he affirmed, *That the Magiſtrates had nothing to do in matters of the firſt Table, but only the ſecond; and that there ſhould be a general and unlimited Toleration of all Religions, and for any man to be puniſhed for any matters of his Conſcience, was perſecution.* And further he procured the Church of *Salem* conſent unto letters of Admonition, which was written and ſent by him in their name, to the Churches at *Boſton*, *Charlſtown*, *New-town* (now *Cambridge*) &c. accuſing the Magiſtrates that were members of the reſpective Churches, of ſundry hainous offences which he laid unto their charge, and though divers did acknowledge their error and gave ſatisfaction, yet Mr. *Williams* himſelf, notwithſtanding all the pains that was taken with him by Mr. *Cotton*, Mr. *Hooker*, and many others, to bring him to a ſight of his errors and miſcarriages, and notwithſtanding all the Courts gentle proceedings with him, he not only perſiſted, but grew more violent in his way, inſomuch as he ſtaying

at

at home in his own house, sent a Letter, which was delivered and read in the publick Church assembly, the scope of which was to give them notice, *That if the Church of* Salem *would not separate not only from the Churches of* Old-England, *but the Churches of* New-England *too, he would separate from them:* the more prudent and sober part of the Church being amazed at his way, could not yield unto him: whereupon he never came to the Church Assembly more, professing separation from them as Antichristian, and not only so, but he withdrew all private religious Communion from any that would hold Communion with the Church there, insomuch as he would not pray nor give thanks at meals with his own wife nor any of his family, because they went to the Church Assemblies: divers of the weaker sort of the Church-members, that had been throughly leavened with his Opinions, of which number were divers women that were zealous in their way, did by degrees fall off to him, insomuch as he kept a meeting in his own house, unto which a numerous company did resort, both on the Sabbath day and at other times, in way of separation from, and opposition to the Church Assembly there; which the prudent Magistrates understanding, and seeing things grow more and more towards a general division and disturbance, after all other means used in vain, they passed a sentence of Banishment against him out of the *Massachusets* Colony, as against a disturber of the peace, both of the Church and Common-wealth.

After which Mr. *williams* sat down in a place called *Providence*, out of the *Massachusets* Jurisdiction, and was followed by many of the members of the Church of *Salem*, who did zealously adhere to him, and who cried out of the Persecution that was against him: some others also resorted to him from other parts. They had not been long there together, but from rigid separation they fell to Anabaptistry, renouncing the Baptism which they had received in their Infancy, and taking up another Baptism, and so began a Church in that way; but *Mr. Williams* stopped not there long, for after some time he told the people that had followed him, and joyned with him in a new Baptism,

that

that *he was out of the way himself, and had mis-led them, for he did not finde that there was any upon earth that could administer Baptism, and therefore their last Baptism was a nullity, as well as their first*; *and therefore they must lay down all, and wait for the coming of new Apostles*: and so they dissolved themselves, and turned *Seekers*, keeping that one Principle, *That every one should have liberty to Worship God according to the Light of their own Consciences*; but otherwise not owning any Churches or Ordinances of God any where upon Earth.

Thus much was thought meet to be inserted here concerning the great and lamentable Apostacy of Mr. *Williams*, that it may be a Warning to all others to take heed of a gradual declining from, and forsaking the Churches of Christ, and Ordinances of God in them, lest they be left of God to run such a course as he hath done; *Wherefore let him that thinks he stands, take heed lest he fall*, 1 Cor. 10. 12. As also to be a Motive to the Saints, to remember him unto God in their fervent Prayers for his return, he having been sometimes an able Dispenser of the Word of God, and (in several respects) of an exemplary Conversation.

And yet that there may be a standing Evidence of the Care that was had in those times to prevent the growth of Errours, and of the exercise of the Communion of Churches for that end, it is thought meet further to insert this passage: That before the putting forth of the Civil Power of the Magistrate for the removing of Mr. *Williams* from *Salem*, and besides other means also used, there was a publick Admonition sent in writing from the Church of *Boston* to the Church of *Salem*, for the reducing of Mr. *Williams*, and the erring part of the Church. The Title of the Writing was,

Errours in Doctrine maintained by some of the Brethren of the Church of Salem, *tending to the disturbance of Religion and Peace in Family, Church and Common-wealth*; viz.

1. THat it is not lawful to call upon an unregenerate man to pray for himself.

2. It is not lawful for a regenerate man to pray with his carnal Family.

3. It is not lawful for Magistrates to take an Oath of Fidelity from unregenerate men.

4. It is not lawful for Magistrates to take an Oath of Fidelity from the body of their Subjects, though regenerate, and Members of Churches.

5. It is not lawful for Magistrates to punish the breaches of the first Table, unless thereby the Civil Peace of the Commonwealth be disturbed.

Whence also it follows, and is confessed,

That a Church wholly declining into *Arianism, Papism, Familism*, or other Heresies, being admonished, and convinced thereof by other Churches, and not reforming, may not be reformed by the Civil Magistrate in a way of Civil Justice, unless it break the Civil Peace.

These Errours were solidly confuted, and the contrary Truths asserted by the Word of God, in that Writing which was Subscribed by

John Cotton Teacher of the Church of *Boston.*
Thomas Oliver } Elders of the same Church.
Thomas Leveret }

Mr. *Wilson* the Pastor of the Church being at that time absent upon a Voyage to *England.*

1630.

1630.

THis Year it pleaſed God of his rich grace to Tranſport over into the Bay of the *Maſſachuſets* divers honourable Perſonages, and many worthy Chriſtians, whereby the Lord began in a manifeſt manner and way to make known the great thoughts which he had of Planting the Goſpel in this remote and barbarous Wilderneſs, and honouring his own Way of Inſtituted Worſhip, cauſing ſuch and ſo many to adhere thereunto, and fall upon the practice thereof: Among the reſt, a chief one amongſt them was that famous Patern of Piety and Juſtice Mr. *John Winthrop*, the firſt Governour of that Juriſdiction, accompanied with divers other precious Sons of *Sion*, which might be compared to the moſt fine gold. Amongſt whom alſo I might name that Reverend and Worthy man, Mr. *John Wilſon*, eminent for Love and Zeal; he likewiſe came over this year, and bare a great ſhare of the difficulties of theſe new beginnings with great chearfulneſs and alacrity of ſpirit: They came over with a Fleet of ten Ships, three of them arriving firſt at *Salem*, in which ſeveral of the chiefeſt of them came, who repaired ſundry of them in ſome ſhort time into the Bay of the *Maſſachuſets*; the other ſeven Ships arrived at *Charlſtown*, where it pleaſed the Lord to exerciſe them with much ſickneſs, and being deſtitute of houſing and ſhelter, and lying up and down in Booths, ſome of them languiſhed and died: yea, it pleaſed God to take away amongſt the reſt, that bleſſed Servant of Chriſt Mr. *Iſaac Johnſon*, with his Lady, ſoon after their arrival, with ſundry other precious Saints. This ſickneſs being heavy upon them, cauſed the principal of them to propoſe to the reſt to ſet a day apart to ſeek the Lord for the aſſwaging of his diſpleaſure therein, as alſo for direction and guidance in the ſolemn enterprize of entring into Church-fellowſhip; which ſolemn day of Humiliation was obſerved by all, not onely of themſelves, but alſo by their

Brethren at *Plimouth* in their behalf: and the Lord was intreated not onely to asswage the sickness, but also encouraged their hearts to a beginning, and in some short time after to a further progress in the great Work of Erecting a way of Worshipping of Christ in Church-fellowship, according to Primitive Institution. Those choice and eminent Servants of Christ did not despise their poor Leaders and Fellow-souldiers that they found in the same Work of the Lord with them at *Plimouth*, but treated them as Brethren, much pitying their great straits and hardships they had endured in the first beginning of Planting this Wilderness, promising all helpfulness even out of their own Estates according to their power; and their said Brethren at *Plimouth* were perswaded they spake as they thought in their hearts: for, such was the simplicity of those times, as that divers faces were not carried under a hood; Pride, Covetousness, Profaneness, and sinful Self, were ashamed to be seen, except in obscure places and persons. Oh poor *New-England*, consider what thou wast, and what thou now art! *Repent, and do thy first works*, saith the Lord; so may
Isa. 48. 18, 19. *thy peace yet be as a river, and thy righteousness as the waves of the sea.* So be it. But to return.

The first that began in the work of the Lord above-mentioned, were their honoured Governour Mr. *John Winthrop*, Mr. *Johnson* fore-named, that much honoured Gentleman Mr. *Thomas Dudley*, and Mr. *John Wilson* aforesaid: These four were the first that began that honourable Church of *Boston*, unto whom there joyned many others. The same year also Mr. *George Philips* (who was a worthy Servant of Christ, and Dispenser of his Word) began a Church-fellowship at *Watertown*; as did also Mr. *Maverick* and Mr. *Wareham* at *Dorchester* the same year.

Thus out of small beginnings greater things have been produced by his hand that made all things of nothing: and as one small Candle may light a thousand; so the Light here kindled hath shone unto many, yea in some sort to our whole Nation. Let the glorious Name of *Jehovah* have all the praise in all Ages.

1631.

1631.

THis Year the Reverend and Uſefull Inſtrument Mr. *John Eliot* came over, and not long after Mr. *Weld*, who began a Church-Society at *Roxbury*; as likewiſe good old Mr. *Maverick* and Mr. *Wareham* began one at *Dorcheſter*.

1632.

THis year one Sir *Chriſtopher Gardiner* (being as himſelf ſaid) deſcended of the houſe of *Gardiner* Biſhop of *Wincheſter*, who was ſo great a Perſecutor of Gods Saints in Queen *Maries* dayes, arrived in *New-England*; he being a great traveller received his firſt honor of Knight-hood at *Jeruſalem*, being made Knight at the Sepulchre there: he came into theſe parts in pretence of forſaking the World, and to live a private life in a godly courſe, not unwilling to put himſelf upon any mean imployment, and take any pains for his living, and ſometimes offered himſelf to joyn to the Church in ſundry places: he brought over with him a ſervant or two, and a comely young woman whom he called his Couſin; but it was ſuſpected (that after the *Italian* manner) ſhe was his Concubine: he living at the *Maſſachuſets*, for ſome miſcarriages for which he ſhould have anſwered, fled away from Authority and got amongſt the Indians in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*; the Government of the *Maſſachuſets* ſent after him but could not get him, and promiſed ſome reward to thoſe that ſhould finde him; the *Indians* came to the Governour of *Plimouth* and told where he was, and asked if they might kill him, but the ſaid Governour told them no, they ſhould not kill him by no means, but if they could take him alive and bring him to *Plimouth*, they ſhould be payed for their pains; they ſaid he had a Gun and a

Rapier, and he would kill them if they went about it, and the *Maſſachuſets Indians* ſaid they might kill him, but the Governour aforeſaid told them no, they ſhould not kill him, but watch their opportunity and take him, and ſo they did; for when they light on him by a River ſide, he got into a Cannoo to get from them, and when they came near him, whiles he preſented his piece at them to keep them off, the ſtream carried the Cannoo againſt a Rock, and threw both him and his Piece and the Rapier into the water, yet he got out, and having a little dagger by his ſide, they durſt not cloſe with him; but getting long poles, they ſoon beat his dagger out of his hand: ſo he was glad to yield, and they brought him to the Governour at *Plimouth*, but his hands and arms were ſwelled and very ſore with the blows they had given him, ſo he uſed him kindly, and ſent him to a lodging where his arms were bathed and annointed, and he was quickly well again, and blamed the *Indians* for beating him ſo much: they ſaid they did but a little whip him with ſticks. In his lodging thoſe that made his bed, found a little Note-book that by accident had ſlipped out of his pocket or ſome private place, in which was a memorial what day he was reconciled to the *Pope* and Church of *Rome*, and in what Univerſity he took his *Scapula*, and ſuch and ſuch a Degree; it being brought to the Governour, he kept it, and ſent it to the Governour of the *Maſſachuſets* with word of his taking, who ſent for him; but afterwards he went for *England* and ſhewed his malice againſt *New-England*, but God prevented him; of which I thought meet to inſert a Letter from Mr. *Winthrop* Governour of the *Maſſachuſets* to Mr. *Bradford* the Governour of *Plimouth* (in reference to this matter) as alſo the Copy of an Order relating to the ſame as followeth. And firſt of the Letter.

SIR,

Upon a Petition exhibited by Sir Chriſtopher Gardiner, *Sir* Ferdinando Gorges, *Captain* Maſon, *&c. againſt you and us, the cauſe was heard before the Lords of the Privy*

Privy Council, and afterwards reported to the King; *the ſucceſs whereof makes it evident to all, that the Lord hath care of his people here; the paſſages are admirable and too long to write: I heartily wiſh for an opportunity to impart them unto you, being many ſheets of Paper; but the concluſion was, againſt all mens expectation, an order for our encouragement, and much blame and diſgrace upon the adverſaries, which calls for much thankfulneſs from us, all which we purpoſe (God willing) to expreſs in a day of thankſgiving to our merciful God, I doubt not but you will conſider if it be not fit for you to joyn in it; who as he hath humbled us by his late correction, ſo he hath lifted us up by an abundant rejoycing in our deliverance out of ſo deſperate a danger; ſo as that which our enemies built their hopes upon to ruine us by, he hath mercifully diſpoſed to our great advantage, as I ſhall further acquaint you when occaſion ſhall ſerve.*

The Copy of the Order follows.

At the Court at Whitehall, *January* 19. 1632.

Sigillum Creſcent.

Lord Privy-Seal.	Mr. *Trevers.*
Earl of *Dorſet.*	Mr. Vice-Chamberlain.
Lord Vicount *Falkland.*	Mr. Secretary *Cook.*
Lord Biſhop of *London.*	Mr. Secretary *Windebank.*
Lord *Cottinton.*	

WHereas his *Majeſty* hath lately been informed of great diſtraction and much diſorder in the Plantations in the parts of *America* called *New-England*, which if they be true, and ſuffered to run on, would tend to the diſhonour of this Kingdome, and utter ruine of that

that Plantation: for prevention whereof, & for the orderly ſetling of Government, according to the intention of thoſe Patents which have been granted by his *Majeſty*, & from his late Royal Father King *James*; It hath pleaſed his *Majeſty* that the Lords and others of his moſt honourable Privy Council ſhould take the ſame into conſideration: Their Lordſhips in the firſt place thought fit to make a Committee of this Board, to take examination of the matters informed: which Committee having called divers of the principal Adventurers in that Plantation, and heard thoſe that are complainants againſt them; moſt of the things informed being denied, and reſting to be proved by parties that muſt be called from that place, which required a long expence of time, and at preſent their Lordſhips finding they were upon diſpatch of Men, Victuals and Merchandiſe for that place, all which would be at a ſtand if the Adventurers ſhould have diſcouragement, or take ſuſpition that the State here had no good opinion of that Plantation; their Lordſhips not laying the fault, or fancies (if any be) of ſome particular men upon the General Government, or principal Adventurers, which in due time is further to be enquired into; have thought fit in the mean time to declare, that the appearances were ſo fair, and hopes ſo great, that the Country would prove both beneficial to this Kingdome, and profitable to the particulars, as that the Adventurers had cauſe to go on cheerfully with their undertakings, and reſt aſſured, if things were carried as was pretended when the Patents were granted, and accordingly as by the Patents it is appointed, His *Majeſty* would not only maintain the Liberties and priviledges heretofore granted,

granted, but ſupply any thing further that might tend to the good Government, proſperity and comfort of His people there of that place, *&c.*

William Tromball.

1633.

THis Year Mr. *Edward Winſlow* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*: And

Mr. *William Bradford*,
Captain *Miles Standiſh*,
Mr. *John Howland*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Mr. *John Dove*,
Mr. *Stephen Hopkins*, &
Mr. *William Gilſon*,
} were Choſen to be his Aſſiſtants in Government.

The Plantation of *Plimouth* having had ſome former converſe with the *Dutch*, as hath been hinted, they ſeeing them ſeated in a barren quarter, told them of a River called by them *the Freſh River*, which they often commended unto them for a good place, both for Plantation and Trade, and wiſhed them to make uſe of it; but their hands being full otherwiſe, they let it paſs: but afterwards there coming a company of *Indians* into theſe parts, that were driven out of their Country by the potency of the *Pequots*, they ſollicited them to go thither. Theſe *Indians* not ſeeing them very forward to entertain the motion, which they moved with great ardency, they ſollicited them of the Government of the *Maſſachuſets* in like ſort; but they being then not fit to entertain the motion, in reſpect that they were newly come into the Country, did not much regard

which is the ſame called Conecticot River.

it. Notwithſtanding, ſome of the chief made a motion to joyn with ſome here in a way of Trade at the ſame River; on which a meeting was appointed to treat concerning the ſame matter, and ſome of *Plimouth* appointed to give them meeting, which they did; but they caſt in the way many fears of danger and loſs, and the like, on which they of the *Maſſachuſets* declined the thing, and did not proceed therein. Whereupon, thoſe of *Plimouth* went on alone, and prepared a Frame of an Houſe, and ſtowed it into a Barque, ready to rear at their landing, and went up the ſaid River, and reared their Houſe, and fenced it about with a Palliſado, which was done with great difficulty, not onely of the *Dutch*, but alſo of the *Indians*.

Notwithſtanding, the place they poſſeſſed themſelves of, was ſuch as the *Dutch* had nothing to do with, and likewiſe was lawfully purchaſed of the *Indians* which they carried with them. And this was *Plimouths* entrance there, who deſerved to have held it, and not by friends to have been thruſt out, as in a ſort they afterwards were.

This year it pleaſed God to viſit *Plimouth* with an infectious Feaver, of which many fell very ſick, and upwards of twenty died, men, women and children, and ſundry of them were of their ancient Friends; amongſt the reſt, Mr. *Samuel Fuller* then died, after he had much helped others, and was a comfort to them: he was their Chirurgion and Phyſician, and did much good in his place, being not onely uſefull in his faculty, but otherwiſe as he was a godly man, and ſerved Chriſt in the Office of a Deacon in the Church for many years, and forward to do good in his place, and was much miſſed after God removed him out of this world.

This ſickneſs cauſed much ſadneſs amongſt them, and according to their duty they beſought the Lord by Faſting and Prayer, and he was intreated of them, and towards Winter the ſickneſs ceaſed. This ſickneſs being a kinde of a peſtilent Feaver, ſwept away alſo many of the *Indians* from many places near adjoyning to *Plimouth*.

It is to be obſerved, That the Spring before this ſickneſs, there

there was a numerous company of *Flies*, which were like for bigneſs unto *Waſps* or *Bumble Bees*, they came out of little holes in the ground, and did eat up the green things, and made ſuch a conſtant yelling noiſe as made all the Woods ring of them, and ready to deaf the hearers; they were not any of them heard or ſeen by the *Engliſh* in the Country before this time: but the *Indians* told them that ſickneſs would follow, and ſo it did very hot in the Months of *June*, *July* and *Auguſt* of that Summer.

Strange and unwonted Flies a preſage of a ſickneſs that followed.

This year there arrived in *New-England* thoſe three worthy Inſtruments, Mr. *John Cotton*, Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, and Mr. *Samuel Stone*, who were Goſpel-Preachers of excellent worth and uſe in their places, untill God took them out of the world unto himſelf.

Mr. Cotton, *Mr.* Hooker, *& Mr.* Samuel Stones *arrival in* N.E.

This year likewiſe Mr. *William Collier* arrived with his Family in *New-England*, who as he had been a good Benefactor to the Colony of *New-Plimouth* before he came over, having been an Adventurer unto it at its firſt beginning; ſo alſo he approved himſelf a very uſeful Inſtrument in that Juriſdiction after he arrived, being frequently Choſen, and for divers years ſerving God and the Country in the place of Magiſtracy; and lived a godly and holy life untill old Age, which to him is *a Crown of Glory, being found in the way of Righteouſneſs.*

Mr. Colliers *arrival in* N.E.

1634.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth:* His Aſſiſtants in Government were

Mr. *William Bradford,*
Mr. *Edward Winſlow,*
Captain *Miles Standiſh,*
Mr. *William Collier,*
Mr. *John Alden,*
Mr. *John Howland,* and
Mr. *Stephen Hopkins.*

A great ſickneſs amongſt the Indians.

In the Spring of this Year there fell a very great ſickneſs of the Small Pox amongſt the *Indians,* ſo as they died moſt miſerably of it; for a ſorer Diſeaſe cannot come amongſt them, and they dread it more then the Plague it ſelf, for uſually thoſe of them which have this Diſeaſe, have them in abundance, and for want of Bedding and Linen, and other Neceſſaries, they fall into a lamentable condition; for as they lye on their hard Mats, the Pox breaking and running one into another, their skin cleaving by reaſon thereof to the Mats they lye on, when they turn them, much of their skin will flay off at once, and they will be all on a gore blood, moſt ſad and grievous to behold; and then being very ſore, what with cold and other diſtempers, they die like rotten ſheep.

This Year one Captain *Stone,* who had ſometimes lived at *Chriſtophers* in the *Weſt-India's,* came into theſe parts; of whom I have nothing to ſpeak in way of commendation, but rather the contrary. After he had been to and fro in the Country, he returned towards *Virginia* with one Captain *Norton*; and ſo it was, that as they returned they went in at *Conecticot* River, where the *Indians* killed the ſaid *Stone* as he lay in his Cabbin, and threw a Covering over him; they likewiſe

wiſe killed all the reſt of his Company but the ſaid Captain *Norton*, he defending himſelf a long time in the Cook-room of the Barque, untill by accident the Gunpowder took fire, which for readineſs he had ſet in an open thing before him, which did ſo burn and ſcald him, and blinde his eyes, as he could make no longer reſiſtance, but was ſlain alſo by them, and they made a prey of his goods.

It is to be obſerved, That the ſaid *Stone* being at the *Dutch* Plantation in the fore-part of this year, a certain Barque of *Plimouth* being there likewiſe on Trading, he kept company with the *Dutch* Governour, and made him drunk, and got leave of him in his drunkeuneſs to take the ſaid Barque, without any occaſion or cauſe given him; and ſo taking his time when the Merchant and ſome of the chief of the men were on ſhore, with ſome of his own men, made the reſt of them weigh Anchor, and ſet ſail to carry her away to *Virginia*: but ſome of the *Dutch* Seamen, who had been at *Plimouth* and received kindneſs, ſeeing this horrible abuſe, got a Veſſel or two and purſued them, and brought them back. After this he came into the *Maſſachuſets* Bay, where they commenced Suit againſt him; but by the mediation of ſome it was taken up, and afterwards in the company of ſome Gentlemen he came to *Plimouth*, and was kindly entertained: but Revenge boiling in his breaſt, (as ſome conceived) he watched a ſeaſon to have ſtabbed the Governour, and put his hand to his Dagger for that end, but by Gods Providence ordering the vigilance of ſome that were about him, he was prevented: but God met with him for theſe and other wickedneſſes, as hath been before related.

1635.

THis year Mr. *William Bradford* was choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*. And

Mr. *Edward Winſlow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Standiſh*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Mr. *John Howland*, and
Mr. *Stephen Hopkins*,

Were Choſen to be his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year Mr. *Edward Winſlow* took a Voyage for *England*, on publick occaſions, and it came to paſs that he had occaſion to anſwer ſome Complaints made againſt the Country, at the Council Board; more chiefly concerning the *Maſſachuſets* Juriſdiction, which he did to good effect, and further proſecuted ſuch things as might tend to the good of the whole: in particular he preferred a Petition to the Right Honourable the Lords Commiſſioners for the Plantations in *America*, in reference unto ſome injuries done by the *French* and *Dutch* unto the Country; which Petition found good acceptance, and was in a way to a ſatisfactory Anſwer: but ſundry Adverſaries interpoſed, whoſe ends were the ſubverſion and overthrow of the Churches, at leaſt to diſturb their peace, and hinder their growth; but by Gods providence it ſo fell out in the end, that although thoſe Adverſaries croſſed the Petition for taking any further effect in the end principally intended in it; yet by this as a means, the whole plot was diſcovered, and thoſe Adverſaries came to nothing: the particulars whereof, are too long here to be inſerted.

This Year, on Saturday, the fifteenth day of *Auguſt*, was ſuch a mighty ſtorm of Wind and Rain, as none now living in theſe

theſe parts, either *Engliſh* or *Indian* had ſeen the like, being like unto thoſe *Hirracanes* or *Tuffins* that writers mention to be ſometimes in the *Indies*. It began in the morning a little before day, and grew not by degrees, but came with great violence in the beginning, to the great amazement of many; It blew down ſundry houſes, and uncovered divers others: divers Veſſels were loſt at Sea in it, and many more in extream danger. It cauſed the Sea to ſwell in ſome places to the ſouthward of *Plimouth*, as that it aroſe to twenty foot right up and down, and made many of the *Indians* to climb into Trees for their ſafety: It threw down all the Corn to the ground, which never roſe more; the which through the mercy of God, it being near harveſt time, was not loſt, though much the worſe: and had the wind continued without ſhifting, in likelihood it would have drowned ſome part of the Country. It blew down many hundred thouſands of Trees, turning up the ſtronger by the roots, and breaking the high Pine Trees and ſuch like in the midſt, and the tall young Oaks, and Walnut Trees of good bigneſs, were wound as a Wyth by it; very ſtrange and fearful to behold: It began in the Southeaſt, and veered ſundry wayes, but the greateſt force of it at *Plimouth*, was from the former quarter, it continued not in extremity above five or ſix hours, ere the violence of it began to abate; the marks of it will remain this many years, in thoſe parts where it was foreſt: the Moon ſuffered a great Eclipſe two nights after it.

The great ſtorm or Hirracane

1636.

1636.

THis Year Mr. *Edward Winslow* was choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*: And

Mr. *William Bradford*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *Stephen Hopkins*,
} were choſen to be his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year the Towns on the River of *Connecticot* began to be planted, and in tranſporting of Goods thither, from the *Maſſachuſets* Bay, two ſhallops were caſt away (loaden with Goods to go thither) in an Eaſterly ſtorm, at the mouth of *Plimouth* Harbour; the Boats men were all loſt, not ſo much as any of their bodies found for burial, they being five in number in both the Boats: the Principal of them was one Mr. *William Cooper*, an antient Seaman of known skill, having formerly been *Maſter* of a ſhip, and had gone great Voyages to the Eaſt-Indies and to other parts, but the night being dark and ſtormy, they ran upon the skirt of a flat that lieth near the mouth of the harbour, and ſo were over-raked; the goods came on ſhore along the Harbour, and the Governour cauſed a careful courſe to be taken for the preſervation of them in the behalf of the right owners, who afterwards received ſo many of them as were ſaved.

Mr. William Cooper caſt away.

Now followeth the Tragedy of the War that fell betwixt the *Engliſh* and the *Pequots*, which I will relate according to my beſt intelligence; in order whereunto I thought good to mention ſome particulars firſt, that by diſcerning the whole matter, in the ſeveral parts and circumſtances, the more of

The Relation of the Pequot *Wars.*

of the mercy and goodneſs of God may be taken notice of, to his praiſe, for deſtroying ſo Proud and Blaſphemous an Enemy.

In the Year 1634. the *Pequots*, a ſtout and war-like People, who had made War with ſundry of their Neighbours, and being puffed up with many Victories, grew now at variance with the *Narrhaganſets*, a great People bordering upon them; theſe *Narrhaganſets* held correſpondence and tearms of friendſhip with the *Engliſh* of the *Maſſachuſets*: now the *Pequots* being conſcious of the guilt of Captain *Stones* death, whom they knew to be an *Engliſh man*, as alſo thoſe that were with him; and being fallen out with the *Dutch*, leſt they ſhould have over many Enemies at once, ſought to make friendſhip with the *Engliſh* of the *Maſſachuſets*, and for that end, ſent both meſſengers and gifts unto them, as appears by ſome Letters ſent from the Governour of the *Maſſachuſets* to the Governour of *Plimouth*, as followeth.

Dear and Worthy Sir,

TO let you know ſomething of our affairs; you may underſtand that the Pequots *have ſent ſome of theirs to us, to deſire our friendſhip, and offered much* Wampam *and* Beaver, *&c. The firſt meſſengers were diſmiſſed without anſwer; with the next we had divers dayes conference, and taking the advice of ſome of our* Miniſters, *and ſeeking the Lord in it, we concluded a peace and friendſhip with them, upon theſe conditions,* that they ſhould deliver up to us thoſe men who were guilty of *Stones* death, &c. *and if we deſired to plant in* Connecticot, *they ſhould give up their right to us, and we would ſend to trade with them as our friends, which was the chief thing we aimed at: they being now in War with the* Dutch *and the reſt of their Neighbours; To this they readily agreed, and that we ſhould mediate a peace*

between them and the Narrhaganſets, *for which end they were content we ſhould give the* Narrhaganſets *part of the Preſent they would beſtow on us; for they ſtood ſo much on their honour, as they would not be ſeen to give any thing of themſelves: as for Captain* Stone, *they told us there were but two left of thoſe who had any hand in his death, and that they killed him in a juſt quarrel,* for (*ſaid they*) he ſurprized two of our men and bound them, to make them by force to ſhew him the way up the River; and he with two other coming on ſhore, nine *Indians* watched them, and when they were aſleep in the night, they killed them, to deliver their own men; and ſome of them going afterwards to the Barque, it was ſuddenly blown up: *We are now preparing to ſend a Barque unto them. And in another Letter he ſaith,* our Barque is lately returned from the *Pequots*, and our men put off but little Commodities, and found them a very falſe people, ſo as we mean to have no more to do with them.

Yours ever aſſured,

Boſton March 12. 1634.

John Winthrop.

Not long after theſe things, Mr. *John Oldham* (of whom much is ſpoken before) being now an inhabitant of the *Maſſachuſets*, went with a ſmall veſſel and ſlenderly manned on trading on thoſe ſouth parts, and upon a quarrel between him and the *Indians*, was cut off by them in ſuch manner as hath been fore-noted, at an Iſland called by the *Indians Manniſſes*, but by the *Engliſh Block-Iſland*; this with the former about the death of *Stone*, and the baffling of the *Pequots* with the *Engliſh* of the *Maſſachuſets*, moved them to ſet out ſome to take revenge, and require ſatisfaction for thoſe wrongs: but it took little effect, ſome of the murderers of Mr. *Oldham* fled to the *Pequots*, and

Mr. Oldhams death.

and although the *Engliſh* went to the *Pequots*, and had ſome parly with them, yet they did but delude them; and the *Engliſh* returned without doing any thing to purpoſe, being fruſtrate of their opportunity by their deceit: After the *Engliſh* of the *Maſſachuſets* were returned, the *Pequots* took their time and opportunity to cut off ſome of the *Engliſh* at Connecticot, as they paſſed up and down upon their occaſions; and tortured ſome of them in putting them to death, in a moſt horrid and barbarous manner: and moſt Blaſphemouſly in this their cruelty, bad them call upon their God, or mocked and derided them when they ſo did; and not long after aſſaulted them at their houſes and habitations, as will appear more fully in the enſuing Relation.

The Pequots horrible Blaſphemy.

1637.

IN the fore-part of this Year, the *Pequots* fell openly upon the *Engliſh* at *Connecticot*, in the lower parts of the River, and ſlew ſundry of them as they were at work in the fields, both men and women, to the great terror of the reſt; and went away in great pride and triumph with many high threats: they alſo aſſaulted *Saybrock* Fort, at the mouth of the River of *Connecticot*, although it was ſtrong and well defended: it ſtruck them with much fear and aſtoniſhment, to ſee their bold attempts in the face of danger, which made them in all places to ſtand upon their guard, and to prepare for reſiſtance, and earneſtly to ſolicite their friends and confederates in the *Maſſachuſets* Bay, to ſend them ſpeedy aid, for they looked for more forceable aſſaults: Mr. *Vane* being then Governour of that Juriſdiction, writ from their General Court to the Governour and Court of *New-Plimouth*, to joyn with them in this War, to which they were cordially willing: In the mean time, before things could be prepared for to ſet out, the *Pequots* (as they had done the winter before) ſought to make peace with the *Narha-*

gunsets, and used many pernitious Arguments to move them thereunto, as *That the* English *were strangers, and began to overspread their Country, and would deprive them thereof in time, if they were suffered to grow and increase; and if the* Narrhaganſets *did assist the* English *to subdue them, that did but make way for their own overthrow; for if they were rooted out, the* English *would soon take occasion to subjugate them; and if they would hearken to them, they should not need to fear the strength of the* English: *for they would not come to open Battel with them, but fire their Houses, kill their Cattel, and lye in ambush for them as they went abroad upon their occasions; and all this they might easily do with little danger to themselves: the which course being held, they well saw the* English *would not long subsist, but they would either be starved with hunger, or forced to forsake the Country*: with many like things; insomuch that the *Narrhaganſets* were once wavering, and were half minded to have made peace with them, and joyned against the *English*; but again when they considered how much wrong they had received from the *Pequots*, and what an opportunity they now had by helping the *English*, to right themselves, revenge was so sweet to them, as it prevailed above all the rest; so as they resolved to joyn with with the *English* against them, and so did. The Court of *Plimouth* agreed to send fifty men at their own charge, and with as much speed as possibly they could get them in a readiness, under sufficient Leaders, and provided a Barque to carry their provisions, and to tend upon them on all occasions, and when they were ready to march with a supply from the Bay, they had word sent them to stay, for the Enemy was as good as vanquished and there would be no need.

I shall not take upon me exactly to describe their Proceedings in this War, because possibly it hath been done by themselves that were Actors therein, and best knew the Circumstances of things: I shall therefore set them down in the main and general, according to my best Intelligence.

From *Conecticot*, who were most sensible of the hurt sustained and the present danger, they set out a party of men,

and

and another party met them from the *Maſſachuſets* Bay at the *Narrhaganſets*, who were to joyn with them. The *Narrhaganſets* were very earneſt to be gone, before the *Engliſh* were well reſted and refreſhed, eſpecially ſome of them which came laſt: It ſhould ſeem their deſire was to come upon the Enemy ſuddenly and unexpectedly. There being a Barque of *Plimouth* newly put in there, which was come from *Conecticot*, they did encourage them to lay hold of the opportunity of the *Indians* forwardneſs, and to ſhew as great forwardneſs as they, for it would encourage them, and Expedition might turn to their great advantage: So they went on, and ſo ordered their march, as the *Indians* brought them to the Fort of their Enemy (in which moſt of their chief men were) before day: They approached the ſame with great ſilence, and ſurrounded it both with *Engliſh* and *Indians*, that they might not break out, and ſo aſſaulted them with great Courage, ſhooting amongſt them, and entred the Fort with great ſpeed; and thoſe that firſt entred found ſharp reſiſtance from the Enemy, who both ſhot and grapled with them: Others ran into their houſes, and brought out fire and ſet them on fire, which ſoon took in their Mats, and their houſes ſtanding cloſe together, with the wind all was ſoon on a flame, and thereby more were burnt to death then were otherwiſe ſlain. It burnt their Bow-ſtrings, and made them unſerviceable. Thoſe that eſcaped the Fire were ſlain with the Sword; ſome hewed to pieces, others run through with their Rapiers, ſo as they were quickly diſpatched, and very few eſcaped: The Number they thus deſtroyed, was conceived to be above Four hundred. At this time is was a fearful ſight to ſee them thus frying in the Fire, and the ſtreams of Blood quenching the ſame; and horrible was the ſtink and ſcent thereof: but the Victory ſeemed a ſweet Sacrifice, and they gave the praiſe thereof to God, who had wrought ſo wonderfully for them, thus to encloſe their Enemies in their hands, and give them ſo ſpeedy Victory over ſo proud, inſulting, and blaſphemous an Enemy. The *Narrhaganſets* all this while ſtood round about a looſ off from all danger, and left

They praiſe God for giving them the victory

the whole Execution to the *Engliſh*, except it were the ſtopping any that brake away, inſulting over their Enemies in their ruines and miſery, when they ſaw them dancing in the Fire; calling by a word in their own Language, ſignifying *O brave Pequots!* which they uſed familiarly amongſt themſelves in their own praiſes, in Songs of Triumph after their Victories.

After this Service was thus happily accompliſhed, the *Engliſh* marched to the water-ſide, where they met with ſome of their Veſſels, by whom they were refreſhed, and ſupplied with Victuals and other Neceſſaries: But in their march, the reſt of the *Pequots* drew into a Body, and followed them, thinking to have ſome advantage againſt them by reaſon of a Neck of Land; but when they ſaw the *Engliſh* prepare for them, they kept aloof, ſo as they neither did hurt, nor would receive any. And after the *Engliſh* their refreſhing, and repairing together for further Counſel and Directions, they reſolved to purſue their Victory, and follow the War againſt the reſt: but the *Narrhaganſets* moſt of them forſook them, and ſuch of them as they had with them for Guides or otherwiſe, they found very cold or backward in the buſineſs, either out of envy, or that they thought the *Engliſh* would make more profit of the Victory then they were willing they ſhould, or elſe deprive them of that advantage that they deſired, in making the *Pequots* become Tributaries unto them, or the like.

For the reſt of this Tragedy, I ſhall onely relate the ſame as it is in a Letter from Mr. *Winthrop* to Mr. *Bradford*, as followeth:

Worthy Sir,

I Received your loving Letter, but ſtraightneſs of time forbids me: for my deſire is to acquaint you with the Lords great mercy towards us, in our prevailing againſt his and our Enemies, that you may rejoice and praiſe his Name with us. About fourſcore of our men having coaſted along towards the Dutch *Plantation, ſometimes by water, but moſt by land, met here and there with ſome*

some Pequots, *whom they slew or took Prisoners. Two* Sachems *they took and beheaded; and not hearing of* Sasacus *the chief* Sachem, *they gave a Prisoner his life to go and finde him out: He went, and brought them word where he was; but* Sasacus *suspecting him to be a Spy, after he was gone, fled away with some twenty more to the* Mohawks, *so our men missed of him: yet dividing themselves, and ranging up and down as the Providence of God guided them, for the* Indians *were all gone save three or four, and they knew not whither to guide them, or else would not; Upon the thirteenth of this Month they lighted upon a great Company,* viz. *Eighty strong men, and two hundred women and children, in a small* Indian *Town fast by a hideous Swamp, which they all slipped into, before our men could get to them. Our Captains were not then come together, but there was Mr.* Ludlow *and Captain* Mason, *with some ten of their men, and Captain* Patrick *with some twenty or more of his, who shooting at the* Indians, *Captain* Trask *with fifty more came soon in at the noise. Then they gave order to surround the Swamp, it being about a Mile round; but Lieutenant* Davenport *and some twelve more, not hearing that Command, fell into the Swamp amongst the* Indians: *The Swamp was so thick with shrubs, and Boggie withall, that some stuck fast, and received many shot. Lieutenant* Davenport *was dangerously wounded about his Arm-hole, and another shot in the Head, so as fainting they were in great danger to have been taken by the* Indians, *but Sergeant* Riggs *and Sergeant* Jeffery, *and two or three more, rescued them, and slew divers of the* Indians *with their Swords. After they were drawn out, the* Indians *desired Parley, and were offered by* Thomas Stanton *our Interpreter, That if they would come out and yield themselves, they should have their lives that had not their hand in the* English *Blood. Whereupon the* Sachem *of the place came forth, and an old man or two, and their wives and children, and so they spake two hours, till it was night: Then* Thomas Stanton *was sent to them again, to call them forth, but they said they would sell their lives there; and so shot at him so thick, as if he had not been presently relieved and rescued on his crying out, they would have slain him. Then our men cut off a place of*

Swamp

Swamp with their ſwords, and cooped up the Indians *into a narrow compaſs, ſo as they could eaſier kill them through the thickets: ſo they continued all the night, ſtanding about twelve foot one from another, and the* Indians *coming up cloſe to our men, ſhot their Arrows ſo thick, as they pierced their Hat brims, and their ſleeves and ſtockens, and other parts of their Clothes, yet ſo miraculouſly did the Lord preſerve them, as not one of them was wounded, ſave thoſe three who raſhly went into the Swamp as aforeſaid. When it was near day it grew very dark, ſo as thoſe of them that were left, dropped away, though they ſtood but twelve or fourteen foot aſunder, and were preſently diſcovered, and ſome killed in the purſuit. In the ſearching of the Swamp the next morning, they found nine ſlain, and ſome they pulled up, whom the* Indians *had buried in the Mire: ſo as they do think that of all this Company not twenty did eſcape, for they after found ſome who died in the flight of their wounds received. The Priſoners were divided, ſome to thoſe of the* River, *and the reſt to us of theſe parts. We ſend the Male-children to* Bermuda's *by Mr.* William Pierce, *and the Women and Maid-children are diſpoſed about in the Towns. There have been now ſlain and taken in all, about Seven hundred, the reſt are diſperſed, and the* Indians *in all quarters ſo terrified, as all their friends are afraid to receive them. Two of the* Sachems *of* Long-Iſland *came to Mr.* Staughton, *and tendred themſelves to be under our Protection; and two of the* Nepannet Sachems *have been with me to ſeek our Friendſhip. Among the Priſoners we have the Wife and Children of* Mononotto, *a woman of a very modeſt countenance and behaviour: It was by her mediation that the two* Engliſh *Maids were ſpared from death, and were kindly uſed by her; ſo that I have taken charge of her. One of her firſt requeſts was,* That the *Engliſh* would not abuſe her body, and that her Children might not be taken from her. *Thoſe which were wounded we fetched ſoon off by* John Gallop, *who came with his Boat in an happy hour to bring them Victuals, and to carry their wounded men to the Barque, where our chief Chirurgion was, with Mr.* Wilſon, *being about eight leagues off. Our people are all in health, the Lord be praiſed: And although they had marched*

in

in their Arms all the day, and had been in fight all the night; yet they profeſſed they found themſelves ſo, as they could willingly have gone to ſuch another buſineſs: the Captains report we have ſlain thirteen Sachems, *but* Saſacus *and* Monotto *are ſtill living; this is the ſubſtance of what I have received, though I am forced to omit many conſiderable circumſtances: ſo being in much ſtraightneſs of time, the ſhips being to depart within this four dayes, and in them the Lord* Lee *and Mr.* Vane; *I here break off, and with hearty Salutation,* &c. *I reſt*

Your aſſured Friend,

July 28. 1637.

John Winthrop.

To conclude the diſcourſe of this matter: This *Saſacus* the *Pequot Sachem*, being fled to the *Mohawks*, they cut off his head, and ſome other of the chief of them, whether to ſatisfie the *Engliſh*, or rather the *Narrhaganſets* (who as I have heard hired them to do it) or for their own advantage, I know not.

And thus this War took end; the body of this People were wholly ſubdued, and their Country taken from them, and ſuch of its Inhabitants as had eſcaped the heat of our revenge, by fire and ſword, being nevertheleſs at the diſpoſe of the Conquerers, were by the *Engliſh* appointed ſome to the *Narrhaganſets*, and ſome to the *Monhegens* under *Unkas* their *Sachem*, who had been faithful and ſerviceable to them in this War: yet the *Narrhaganſets* were not pleaſed that themſelves had not the ſole Government of the Captives, and have ſince been continually quarrelling with the *Monheags*, and have ſometimes been plotting againſt the *Engliſh* alſo; but to conclude, the *Pequots* have ſince been taken under the immediate Government of the *Engliſh* Colonies, and live in their own Country, being Governed by ſuch of their own, as are by the *Engliſh* ſubſtituted and appointed for that purpoſe.

This year Mr. *William Bradford* was choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*. And

Mr. *Edward Winſlow*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Capt. *Myles Standiſh*,
And
Mr. *John Jenny*,

Were Choſen his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year Mr. *Theophilus Eaton* and Mr. *John Davenport*, accompanied with divers other Chriſtians of ſpecial eminency, began the fourth of the United Colonies in *New-England*, called *New-Haven*, where they erected a Church of Chriſt, which continue in Goſpel Order until this day, in an amiable and exemplary manner; notwithſtanding they have met with divers loſſes and croſſes, both of eminent and uſeful Inſtruments, as alſo of a great part of their eſtates, as in ſpecial by the loſs of Mr. *Lambertons* ſhip. Of which ſaid Plantation and Colony, I have little to inſert, for want of more full and certain intelligence.

Called by the Dutch Roeabert *and by the* Indians Quinnapiuk.

About this time there aroſe great troubles in the Country, eſpecially at *Boſton*, by the broaching of *Antinomian* and *Familiſtical* Opinions; the chief ſect-leader thereof, was one Mrs. *Hutchinſon*: theſe carried on their abominable Tenets, with ſuch ſubtilty, under a pretence of advancing free-grace, and crying up the Covenant of Grace, and down the Covenant of Works, as they took away (by their aſſertions) Grace from the Covenant; yea ſo cloſe was this myſtery of Iniquity carried on, as that ſome of the prudenteſt of the Orthodox party, could not diſcern it at the firſt; but at length, the folly of thoſe that were principal therein was made manifeſt unto all men: the evil conſequences thereof faced very ſadly, ſo as it influenced into their Civil State, and cauſed great diſturbance: but by Gods bleſſing on the improvement of the faithful endeavours

of

of his Servants, the Meſſengers of the Churches, who were called together as a Synod to help in the caſe; together with the prudence and induſtry of ſundry principal ones amongſt them, both in Church and State at other times: a right underſtanding of ſome few things, in difference amongſt the ſincere and godly, was procured. The Ring-leaders of the Faction being thus detected were cenſured, not only by the Church, but by the Civil power, and were alſo condemned to exile; who not knowing where they might ſit down ſafely, made requeſts unto the Government of *Plimouth*, that they might be at an Iſland, that they had not hitherto improved, called by the *Indians Aquetnet*, (and by the *Engliſh* inhabiting it *Road-Iſland*) which the Government of *Plimouth* aforeſaid, conſidering they were their Country-men and fellow Subjects that were thus diſtreſſed, and deſtitute of habitation, although they had their errors in as great diſlike as thoſe from whence they came, yet pittying them in their preſent ſtraights, granted their requeſt: ſo theſe having there ſeated themſelves, and finding that it was a very fruitful and pleaſant place, (ſuch indeed, as that Colony or Jurisdiction hath not any the like left within their Patent) they ſoon drew many more unto them, not only to fill up that Iſland, but have alſo ſeated two more Towns on the Main; therein (as is judged) incroaching upon the juſt rights of the aforeſaid Colony of *Plimouth*, and have of late through miſ-information obtained a Patent, not only for the places forementioned, but have alſo extended it into the heart and bowels of the known & poſſeſſed rights of the ſaid Colony: endeavoring to requite their kindneſs, as ſometimes it is ſaid the Hedge-hog did by the friendly Coney. But it is our great happineſs, that as God takes notice from on high of the unrighteouſneſs and oppreſſion of the ſons of men, ſo he hath given us a gracious Prince, who mindes the peace of His meaneſt Subjects, from whoſe Juſtice and Prudence we do confidently expect relief, and on that aſſurance do reſolve by Gods help to contain our ſelves from ſeeking to vindicate our wrongs in ſuch a way as their injurious dealings might provoke unto.

This Year there was a hideous *Monſter* born at *Boſton* in *New-England*, of one Mrs. *Mary Dyer*, a Co-partner with the ſaid Mrs. *Hutchinſon*, in the aforeſaid Hereſies; the ſaid *Monſter* (as it was related to me) *It was without Head, but Horns like a Beaſt, Scales or a rough skin like the fiſh called the* Thornback, *it had Leggs and Claws like a Fowl, and in other reſpects as a Woman Childe*: the Lord declaring his deteſtation of their Monſtrous errors (as was then thought by ſome) by this prodigious Birth.

Not long before theſe Troubles, there arrived at *Boſton* one *Samuel Gorton*, who from thence came to *Plimouth*; and upon his firſt coming thither, gave ſome hopes that he would have proved an uſeful Inſtrument, but ſoon after, by little and little, diſcovered himſelf to be a proud and peſtilent Seducer, and deeply leavened with blaſphemous and *Familiſtical Opinions*: and obſerving ſuch Fictions to be ſpread by ſome of his Spirit already in the Country, he takes his opportunity to begin to ſowe ſuch ſeed at *Plimouth*, whereby ſome were ſeduced, in ſpecial one *John Weeks* and his Wife, who in ſome ſhort time became very Atheiſts, looking for no more happineſs then this world affords, not onely in practice ſuch, but alſo in opinion. But the ſaid *Gorton* falling into ſome Controverſie with one Mr. *Ralph Smith*, was ſummoned to the Court held at *Plimouth* the fourth of *December* 1638. to Anſwer the ſaid Mr. *Smiths* Complaint; and there he carried ſo mutinouſly and ſeditiouſly, as that he was for the ſame, and for his turbulent carriages towards both Magiſtrates and Miniſters in the preſence of the Court, Sentenced to finde Sureties for his good Behaviour, during the time he ſhould ſtay in the Juriſdiction, which was limited to fourteen dayes, and alſo Amerced to pay a conſiderable Fine. In ſome ſhort time after he departed to *Road-Iſland*, and in like manner or worſe demeaned himſelf there, ſo as they were forced to Sentence him to ſuffer Corporal Puniſhment by *Whipping*, and they Baniſhed him likewiſe off the Iſland. And from thence he with divers of his Accomplices went to *Providence*, and there he and they carried ſo

in

in outrage and riotously, as they were in danger to have caused Bloodshed, so as the Inhabitants some of them, *viz.* Mr. *Roger Williams* and others, were constrained to sollicite the Government of the *Massachusets* for aid, and help them against their Insolencies: And for that end, some of them desired to come under their Jurisdictiou, and were accepted. Moreover, several of the poor Neighbouring Natives were so injuriously wronged by them the said *Gorton* and his Company, they seeking to bereave them of their just Rights of Lands by surreptitious wayes; in special, *Pomham* and *Sokanoko*, two petty *Sachems* living not farre off from *Providence*, who were bereaved of their just Rights in Lands, by improving the Tyranny of *Miantonimok*, the then chief *Sachem* of the *Narrhaganſets*, for the procuring thereof, which necessitated the said under-Sachems to make their Appeal to the Court of the *Massachusets* for help in their oppressed condition, subjecting themselves and their Lands unto their Jurisdiction likewise: which caused the said Government to Require their Appearance at *Boston*, to Answer the Complaints of those oppressed *English* and *Indians*. But notwithstanding they several times sent to them with all gentleness and courteous expressions, they neither appeared, nor sent satisfying Reasons for their absence; but in stead thereof, many insolent, proud, railing, opprobrious Returns: so that the said Government saw there was no remedy, but to send force to constrain them to come; which they accordingly performed, and Committed the said *Gorton* and several of them to Ward: and during the time of their Imprisonment, they carried still very proudly and audaciously towards all in place of Authority, sparing not to reproach, abuse and traduce the most Honourable and Reverend both in Church and State; and which is yet worse, spared not blasphemously to fly upon the Lord Jesus himself, his Word and Ordinances, in such a manner as scarce in any Age any Hereticks or Apostates have done the like: Not onely abandoning and rejecting all Civil Power and Authority, (except moulded according to their own Fancies) but belching out errours in their *Familistical*

The Answer of Mr. E. Winslow *to* Gortons *pamphlet, entituled,* Simplicities defence against the seven headed policy, *will give the Reader a full & particular inteligence concerning all the transactions of those matters and likewise of their damnable Errours.*

Horrible Familiſm and Blaſphemy, as if they were ſpoken by, and differ little from the curſed doctrine of their grand Leader Henry Nicols.

ſticall Allegories (if I may ſo call them) as (to ſpeak with holy reverence) they rendred the Lord Chriſt no other then an *Imagination*; ſhunning not blaſphemouſly to ſay, *That Chriſt was but a ſhadow and reſemblance of what is done in every Chriſtian*; That *Chriſt was Incarnate in* Adam, *and was that Image of God wherein* Adam *was created*; and, *That his being born afterwards of the Virgin* Mary, *and ſuffering, was but a manifeſtation of his ſuffering in* Adam; *That Man's loſing Gods Image, was the Death of Chriſt*; *That Chriſt is the Covenant properly*; and, *That Faith and Chriſt are all one:* They call the holy Word, and Sermons of Salvation, *Tales*; the Lords-Supper, *An Abomination*, and *A Spell*; Baptiſm, *Vanity and Abomination*; the Miniſters of the Word, *Necromancers:* and by other opprobrious terms villifie and traduce them. Much more might be ſpoken and mentioned of this ſtuff, which they have not been aſhamed to divulge; but a little is enough: ſave but to give the Reader to ſee the Lords goodneſs towards his poor people in *New-England*, that hath delivered us, and ſaved us of his grace from their pernicious deſtructive wayes, and hath ſo detected their folly, as it is made manifeſt to all men. In fine, the ſaid *Gorton* and his fellow-Priſoners were ſeveral of them Sentenced to remain in durance in ſeveral Towns of the Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſets* for ſix Months, and afterwards Baniſhed.

He was a ſubtile Deceiver, courteous in his carriage to all at ſome times (for his own ends) but ſoon moved with paſſion, and ſo loſt that which he gained upon the ſimple. To ſhut up what I have to ſay concerning him, which is ſad; He is ſince become a ſordid man in his life, as he hath been declared to be in his curſed Principles and Opinions, and hath not ſhunned to ſay and affirm, That all the felicity we are like to have, we muſt expect in this life, and no more: and therefore adviſed one with whom he had ſome ſpeech, to *make much of her ſelf, for ſhe muſt expect no more but what ſhe could enjoy in this life*; or words to the ſame effect. Thus *evil men and deceivers grow worſe and worſe, deceiving and being deceived*, 2 Tim. 3. 13.

1638.

1638.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Chosen Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *William Bradford*,
Mr. *Edward Winslow*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Mr. *John Jenny*,
Mr. *John Atwood*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
} were Chosen Assistants in Government.

This year three men were Executed for Robbing and Murthering an *Indian* near *Providence*, which besides the Evidence that came against them, they did in substance Confess against themselves, and were Condemned by Legal Tryal. Some have thought it great severity, to Hang three *English* for one *Indian*; but the more Considerate will easily satisfie themselves for the Legality of it: and indeed, should we suffer their Murtherers to go unpunished, we might justly fear that God would suffer them to take a more sharp Revenge. By such Arguments was the Government of *Plimouth* moved by the Government of the *Massachusets* to do Justice in the case. And here may be noted, That the *Massachusets* refused this Tryal, as being committed in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*; and they of *Road-Island* having Apprehended them, delivered them to the aforesaid Jurisdiction of *Plimouth* on the same grounds.

This Year, about the second of *June*, there was a great and fearful Earthquake: It was heard before it came with a rumbling Noise, or low murmure, like unto remote Thunder. It came from the Northwards, and passed Southwards: as the Noise approached near, the Earth began to quake; and it came at length with that violence, as caused Platters, Dishes, and

and ſuch like things which ſtood upon Shelves, to clatter and fall down; yea, people were afraid of their Houſes: and it was ſo, as that ſome being without doors could not ſtand, but were fain to catch hold of Poſts and Pales to prevent them from falling. About half an hour after, or leſs, came another Noiſe and ſhaking, but not ſo loud nor ſtrong as the former. It was not onely on the Land, but at Sea alſo; for ſome Ships that were on the Sea-coaſt were ſhaken by it: ſo powerful is the mighty hand of the Lord, as to cauſe both *the Earth and Sea to ſhake, and the Mountains to tremble before him: His way is in the Whirlwind, and the ſtorm and the Clouds are the duſt of his feet; the Rocks are thrown down before him: Who can ſtand before his indignation? and who can abide in the fierceneſs of his anger?*

Nahum 1. 3,4,5,6.

1639.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Choſen Governour of *Plimouth:*

Mr. *Thomas Prince,*
Captain *Miles Standiſh,*
Mr. *John Alden,*
Mr. *John Brown,*
Mr. *William Collier,*
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly,*
Mr. *John Jenny,*
} were Choſen Aſſiſtants.

This Year *HARVARD* COLLEDGE was Erected at *Cambridge* in *New-England*, which was ſo called in Remembrance of a worthy Gentleman, who liberally Contributed towards the Charge of the Erecting of it.

This Year the great Sachem *Wooſamequen*, ſometimes called *Maſſaſoiet*, and *Mooanam* his Son, came into the Court held at *Plimouth* in *New-England*, on the Five and twentieth day of

of *September*, in their own proper persons, and desired that the ancient League and Confederacy formerly made with the Government of *Plimouth* aforesaid, (wherein he acknowledged himself Subject to the King of *England* and his Successors) may stand, and remain inviolable: And the said *Wooſamequen* and *Mooanam* his Son, for themselves and their Successors, did faithfully promise to keep and observe the Covenants and Conditions therein expressed and contained, which on their parts are likewise to be kept and observed. And the said *Wooſamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, did then also promise to the whole Court aforesaid, That he nor they shall nor will needlesly or unjustly raise any quarrels, or do any wrong to other Natives, to provoke them to War against him; and, That he nor they shall not Give, Sell or Convey any of his or their Lands, Territories or Possessions whatsoever, to any person or persons whomsoever, without the privity and consent of the Government of *Plimouth* aforesaid, other then to such as the said Government shall send or appoint. All which Conditions the said *Wooſamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, for themselves and their Successors, did then faithfully promise to observe and keep. And the whole Court, in the Name of the whole Government, for each Town respectively, did then likewise Ratifie and Confirm the aforesaid ancient League aud Confederacy; and did also further promise to the said *Wooſamequen*, and *Mooanam* his Son, and their Successors, *That they shall and will from time to time defend the said* Wooſamequen, *and* Mooanam *his Son, and their Successors, when need and occasion shall require, against all such as shall unjustly rise up against them to wrong or oppress them unjustly.*

He that here is called Mooanam *is the same that afterwards was called* Wamsutta; *it being usuall for the Indians to change their Names.*

Of this see pag. 24.

1640.

MR. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
and
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,
} were Elected Assistants.

1641.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Edward Winslow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*, and
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,
} were Chosen Assistants to him in Government.

1642.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Edward Winslow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *William Thomas*, and
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,
were Elected Assistants to him in Government.

In reference unto the three years last specified, although I have no special Providence to take notice of, particularly to assign to each of them, save the continuance of Gods mercy and goodness in the Annual Election of godly and able Magistrates in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*, as is before-noted; yet notwithstanding we are to take notice of the continued Peace and Plenty, with which not onely these three years (restrictively considered) but also for many years together both before and after them, *New-England* was so marvellously gratiated. But that which is more, that about these times the Lord was pleased of his great goodness richly to accomplish and adorn the Colony of *Plimouth* (as well as other Colonies in *New-England*) with a considerable number of godly and able Gospel-Preachers, who then being dispersed and disposed of to the several Churches and Congregations thereof, gave Light in a glorious and resplendent manner, as burning and shining Lights: Which mercy and transcendent favour, had not Sin and Satans envy interposed, might have rendred them greatly happy and prosperous; it being observed, That where Gospel-dispensation flourisheth, there Prosperity in other respects may usually be expected.

In reference unto the honour of God, and due reſpects unto ſuch worthy Inſtruments, I thought meet to nominate ſome of the ſpecialleſt of them; *viz.*

Mr. *Charles Chauncy*,
Mr. *William Hook*,
Mr. *Nicholas Street*,
Mr. *John Laythrop*,
Mr. *John Mayo*,
Mr. *John Reyner*,
Mr. *Ralph Partridge*,
Mr. *Samuel Newman*,
Mr. *William Leverich*,
Mr. *Richard Blinman*,
Mr. *Edward Bulkly*,
Mr. *John Miller*,
Mr. *Marmaduke Matthews*,

With ſome others that might be named. Theſe ſome of them ſtayed not long ere they removed, ſome into the Neighbour-Colonies, ſome into *Old-England*, and others to their Eternal Reſt, whereby the ſaid Juriſdiction was wanting in a great meaſure for ſome time of ſuch a Bleſſing: Howbeit, the Lord hath ſince graciouſly raiſed up a ſupply to divers of the ſaid Congregations, and more may be expected according to his Promiſes.

1643.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was elected Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*: And

Mr. *Edward Winſlow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,
And Mr. *William Thomas*,

were choſen his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year about the eighteenth day of *April* died Mr. *William*

liam Brewſter, the Ruling Elder of the Church of Chriſt at *Plimouth*; concerning whom, I could ſay much of mine own knowledge; but I ſhall content my ſelf, only to inſert the honourable Teſtimony that Mr. *William Bradford* deceaſed, hath left written with his own hand, concerning him.

Saith he, *My dear Friend Mr.* William Brewſter *was a man that had done and ſuffered much for the Lord Jeſus, and the Goſpels ſake, and hath born his part in weal and woe, with this poor perſecuted Church, above thirty ſix years, in* England, Holland, *and in this* Wilderneſs; *and done the Lord and them faithful ſervice in his place and calling: and notwithſtanding the many troubles and ſorrows he paſſed through, the Lord upheld him to a great age; he was four ſcore and four years of age when he died; he had this bleſſing added by the Lord to all the reſt, to dye in his bed in peace amongſt the midſt of his friends, who mourned and wept over him, and miniſtred what help and comfort they could unto him; and he again recompenſed them while he could: his ſickneſs was not long, and until the laſt day thereof, he did not wholly keep his bed, his ſpeech continued until ſomewhat more then half a day before his death, and then failed him, and about nine or ten of the clock that evening he died without any pangs at all; a few hours before, he drew his breath ſhort, and ſome few minutes before his laſt, he drew his breath long, as a man fallen into a ſound ſleep, without any pangs or gaſping, and ſo ſweetly departed this life unto a better.* The death of Mr. *William Brewſter*.

I would now demand of any, What he was the worſe for former ſufferings? what, do I ſay worſe? no, he was the better, and they now added to his honor: It is a manifeſt token (*ſaith the Apoſtle*) of the righteous Judgement of God, that we may be counted worthy of the Kingdom of God, for which we alſo ſuffer; ſeeing it is a righteous thing with God, to recompence tribulation to them that trouble you, and to you who are troubled, reſt with us when the Lord Jeſus ſhall be revealed from Heaven, with his mighty Angels; and if you be reproached (*ſaith the Apoſtle Peter*) for the Name of Chriſt, happy are ye, for the Spirit of God and of Glory ſhall reſt upon you: *what though he wanted the riches and pleaſures of the World in this life, and Pom-* 2 Theſſ. 1. 5,6,7. 1 Pet. 4. 14.

pous monuments of his Funeral? yet the memorial of the Juſt
Prov. 10.17. ſhall be bleſſed, when the name of the wicked ſhall rot (*with their Marble Monuments.*) *He was well educated in learning, as at inferiour Schools, ſo alſo at the Univerſity; and from thence went to the Court, and there ſerved Mr.* Daviſon *a godly Gentleman, and Secretary of State to Queen* Elizabeth, *and attended him on his Embaſſage into* Holland, *and was imployed by him in matters of greateſt truſt; as in keeping of the Keys of the Cautionary Towns delivered up to him for her Majeſty, and things of the like nature; his Maſter would alwayes in private confer with him as a friend or equal: he afterwards lived in good eſteem in his own Country, and did much good, until the troubles of theſe times enforced his remove into* Holland, *and ſo into* New-England, *and was in both places of ſingular uſe and benefit to the Church and People of* Plimouth *whereof he was; being eminently qualified for ſuch work as the Lord had appointed him unto, of which ſhould I ſpeak particularly as I might, I ſhould prove tedious: I ſhall content my ſelf therefore only to have made honorable mention in general of ſo worthy a man.*

And here I might take occaſion to mention with admiration, the marvellous providence of God, that notwithſtanding the many changes and hardſhips that this people, *viz.* the firſt Planters at *New-Plimouth* went through, and the many Enemies they had, and difficulties they met withal, that ſo many of them ſhould live until very old age: It was not only this Reverend mans condition, but many more of them did the like; ſome dying before and about this time, and ſome living, who attained to ſixty years of age, and to ſixty five, divers to ſeventy, and ſome to more then eighty as he did: It muſt needs be more then ordinary, and above natural reaſon that ſo it ſhould be; for it is found in experience, that changing of Air, Famine, and unwholſome Food, much drinking of Water, Sorrows and Troubles *&c.* all of them are enemies to health, cauſes of much diſeaſes, conſumers of natural vigor, and the bodies of men, and ſhortners of life; and yet of all theſe things they had a large and long part, and ſuffered deeply in the ſame:

they

they went from *England* to *Holland*, where they found both worse Air & Diet, then that they came from; from thence, enduring a long imprisonment in the ships at Sea into *New-England*; & how it hath been with them here hath already been shewn, & what crosses, troubles, fears, wants and sorrows they have been liable unto, is easily to be discerned, so as in some sort they may say with the Apostle, *they were in Journeys often, in perils of Waters, in perils of Robbers, in perils of their own Nation, in perils amongst the Heathen, in perils in the Wilderness, in perils in the Sea, in perils amongst false Brethren, in wearines, in painfulness, in watching often, in hunger, thirst, in fasting often, in cold and nakedness:* What was it then that upheld them? It was Gods visitation that preserved their spirits; he that upheld the Apostle, upheld them: *They were persecuted but not forsaken, cast down but perished not, as unknown and yet known, as dying and behold we live, as chastened and yet not killed.* 1 Cor. 11. 26. 27. Job 10. 12. 2 Cor. 4. 9. 2 Cor. 9. 6.

God (it seems) would have all men behold such works of his Providence, as these are towards his people, that they in like cases might be incouraged to depend upon him in their trials, and also bless his Name when they see his goodness towards others; *Man lives not by bread only*: It is not by dainty fare, peace, rest and hearts ease, in enjoying contentments and good things of this World only, that preserves health and prolongs life: God (in such examples) would have the World take notice, that he can do it without them; and if the World will shut their eyes and take no notice thereof, yet he would have his people to see and consider it: *Daniel* could be in better liking with *Pulse*, then with the Kings dainties; *Jacob*, though he went from one Nation to another People, and passed through Famine, Fears and many afflictions, yet he lived until old age, and died sweetly and rested in the Lord, as many others of Gods servants have done, and still do through Gods goodness, notwithstanding all the malice of their enemies; *When the branch of the wicked shall be cut off before his day, and the bloody and deceitful man shall not live out half his dayes.* Deut. 8. 3. Job 15. 32. Psal. 55. 23.

By reason of the plotting of the *Narrhaganſets* ever since the

Pequot

Pequot War, the *Indians* were drawn into a general conſpiracy againſt the *Engliſh* in all parts, as was in part diſcovered the year before, and now made more plain and evident, by many diſcoveries and free confeſſions of ſundry *Indians*, upon ſeveral occaſions, from divers places, concurring in one; with ſuch other concurring circumſtances, as gave the *Engliſh* ſufficiently to underſtand the truth thereof, and to think of means how to prevent the ſame. In which reſpect, together with divers other and more weighty reaſons, the four Colonies (*viz.*) the *Maſſachuſets*, *Plimouth*, *Conecticot* and *New-Haven*, entred into a more near Union and Confederation the nineteenth day of *May* 1643. and the Articles of the ſaid confederation were ſigned by the Commiſſioners of the ſaid Juriſdictions reſpectively, by which were Authorized thereunto, *viz.*

John Winthrop Governour of the *Maſſachuſets.*
Thomas Dudley.
Edward Winſlow.
William Collier.
Edward Hopkins.
Thomas Grigſon.
Theophilus Eaton.
George Fenwick.

The ſaid Articles at large, with ſundry other particulars appertaining thereunto, together with the particulars concerning the plotting, contrivements, menacings and inſolencies of the *Narrhaganſets* againſt the *Engliſh*, together with the proviſion and preparation made by the *Engliſh* for an expedition againſt them, with the yieldings and compliance of the ſaid *Narrhaganſets* to the *Engliſh*, and the Compoſition and Articles of agreement made with them, *&c.* theſe are all to be ſeen as they are at large extant in the Records of the Commiſſioners for the United Colonies of *New-England*, whereunto I refer the Reader.

See Acts of the Commiſſioners for the united Colonies of N.E. *An.* 1644. *and* 1645.

1644.

1644.

THis Year Mr. *Edward Winſlow* was Elected Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *William Bradford*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *William Thomas*,
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,
were Elected his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year Mr. *John Atwood* died, he was a godly man, ſingularly endowed with the grace of Patience, and having a large eſtate became a uſeful benefactor to the Colonie of *New-Plimouth*; he departed this life, expreſſing great Faith in Chriſt, and a cheerful expectation of the reſtoration of his body at the general Reſurrection in Glory.

This Year many of the Town of *Plimouth*, by reaſon of ſome ſtraights that were upon them, took up thoughts of removing to ſome other place for their better accommodation, and for that end made a more exact and particular diſcovery of a place called by the *Indians*, *Namſet*, which place being purchaſed by them of the *Indians*, divers of the conſiderableſt of the Church and Town removed thither, and erected a Town, which is now called by the name of *Eaſtham*.

1645.

THis year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*. And

Mr. *Edward Winslow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Capt. *Myles Standish*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*, &
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,

Were Elected his Assistants in Government.

The Commissioners of the United Colonies of *New-England* were called together this Year, before their ordinary time of meeting, partly in regard of some differences between the *French* and the Government of the *Massachusets*, about their aiding of *Monsieur Latore* against *Monsieur de Aubny*, and partly about the *Indians*, who had broken their former agreements about the peace concluded the year before; as concerning such conclusions and determinations which passed in this meeting, in reference to the premises, I shall refer the Reader unto the Acts of the said Commissioners for that Year, as they are recorded at large.

This meeting was held the 28 of July, 1145.

1646.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Choſen Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Edward Winſlow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Miles Standiſh*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
And
Mr. *Edmond Freeman*,
} were Elected his Aſſiſtants in Government.

About the middle of *May* this Year, there came three Men of War into *Plimouth Harbour*, under the command of Captain *Thomas Cromwel*, who had taken ſeveral Prizes from the *Spaniards*, by Commiſſion from the Earl of *VVarwick*: they were full of monies, ſilks, and other rich goods, ſome of which they left behinde them. They were a company of luſty ſtout men, but very unruly and hard to govern; notwithſtanding the care and vigilance, both of ſuch as were in Authority of *Plimouth*, and alſo of their own Commanders, who could hardly reſtrain them, eſpecially from inordinate drinking and quarrelling: It proved fatal to one of them, who being quarrelling with one of their own company, and being commanded by their Captain to forbear, he giving very provoking Language, and alſo attempting to draw upon his Captain; he took his Rapier from him, and ſtruck him on the head, with the Hilt, of which wound, three or four dayes after he died: the Captain was tried by a Council of War, and acquitted by the largeneſs of his Commiſſion.

This Year Mr. *Edward VVinſlow* went for *England*, upon occaſion that ſome diſcontented perſons, under the Government of the *Maſſachuſets*, ſought to trouble their peace, and

disturb, if not innovate their Government, by laying many scandals upon them, and intended to prosecute against them in *England*, by Petitioning and Complaining to the *Parliament*. Also *Samuel Gorton* and his company, made complaint against them; so as they made choice of Mr. *Winslow* to be their Agent to make their defence, and gave him Commission and Instructions for that end: in which he so carried himself, as did well answer their ends, and cleared them from any blame and dishonour, to the shame of their Adversaries. After this he fell upon other imployments in *England*, which detained him there, so as he returned not again to *New-England* any more, whose absence hath been much to the weakening of the Government of *New-Plimouth*, who had large experience of his help and usefulness amongst them in Government, *&c.* of whom I have more to insert in honour of so worthy a Gentleman in its more proper place.

1647.

MR. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Edward Winslow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *John Brown*, And
Mr. *William Thomas*,
were Elected his Assistants in Government.

This,

This Year the whole Land, but more especially the Church and Town of *Hartford* on *Conecticot*, sustained a great and more then ordinary Loss, by the Death of that most eminent Servant of Jesus Christ Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, who in the Month of *July* in this year changed this Life for a better: Concerning whose Piety, Learning, and singular dexterity in Preaching the Gospel with answerable success, the many Souls wrought upon by his Ministry in both *Old-England* and *New*, do give forth a large Testimony; and withall, as an addition to the former, those Learned and Profitable Works penned by him for the Refutation of Errour, and guiding and confirming of the Saints in the Wayes of Christ: In which respects, with others, his Name will live, and is Embalmed; and doth remain, and will be as a precious Oyntment in the Churches, and amongst the Saints, in present and future Ages. *The Death of Mr.* Hooker.

This special Servant of Christ, as he served his Master with great Zeal, Love, Wisdome, and Sincerity; so he ended his Life with much Comfort and Serenity: so as it is rare that was said of him, That *the peace which he had in believing thirty years before his death, was firm and not touched by the Adversary untill the period of his life:* And with much joy and peace in believing he fell asleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at *Hartford* on *Conecticot*.

In whose Memorial, I shall here insert the Funeral *Elegies* of two eminent Divines, written upon his Death.

On my Reverend and dear Brother, Mr. Thomas Hooker, Late Pastor of the Church at *Hartford* on *Conecticot*.

TO see three things was holy Austins *wish*,
Rome *in her Flower*, *Christ Jesus in the Flesh*,
And Paul *i'th Pulpit: Lately men might see*,
Two first, and more, in Hookers *Ministry*.

Zion *in Beauty, is a fairer sight*,
Then Rome *in Flower, with all her glory dight*:

Yet Zions *Beauty did moſt clearly ſhine*
In Hookers *Rule, and Doctrine: both Divine.*

Chriſt in the Spirit, is more then Chriſt in Fleſh,
Our Souls to quicken, and our States to bleſs?
Yet Chriſt in Spirit brake forth mightily,
In faithful Hookers *ſearching Miniſtry.*

Paul *in the Pulpit,* Hooker *could not reach;*
Yet did He Chriſt in Spirit ſo lively preach,
That living Hearers thought He did inherit
A double Portion of Pauls *lively ſpirit.*

Prudent in Rule, in Argument quick, full:
Fervent in Prayer, in Preaching powerfull:
That well did learned Ames *record bear,*
The like to Him he never wont to hear.

'Twas of Geneva's *Worthies ſaid, with wonder,*
(Thoſe Worthies Three:) Farell *was wont to Thunder;*
Viret, *like Rain, on tender graſs to ſhower;*
But Calvin, *lively Oracles to pour.*

All theſe in Hookers *ſpirit did remain:*
A Son of Thunder, and a Shower of Rain,
A pourer forth of Lively Oracles,
In ſaving Souls, the ſum of Miracles.

Now bleſſed Hooker, *thou art ſet on high,*
Above the thankleſs world, and cloudy ſkie:
Do thou of all thy labour reap the Crown,
Whilſt we here reap the ſeed which thou haſt ſown.

J. C.

A Lamentation for the Death of that Precious and Worthy Minister of Jesus Christ, Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, who died *July* 7. 1647. as the Sun was Setting: the same hour of the day died blessed *Calvin*, that glorious Light.

COme sighs, come sorrows, let's lament this Rod,
Which hath bereav'd us of this Man of God:
A Man of God, which came from God to men,
And now from them is gone to God agen.
Bid Joy depart, bid Merriment be gone;
Bid Friends stand by, sit sorrowful alone.
But ah! what sorrow can be to suffice,
Though Heaven and Earth were filled with our cries,
The Clouds were turned into drops of tears,
The Mourning for to last an Age of Years?
'Twere all too little to lament his death,
Whose life so precious was for Heaven and Earth.
Job *wish'd his day might quite forgotten me,*
Which brought him forth this worlds light first to see:
O let not the day numbred be i'th Year,
That took this Light out of our Hemisphere.
A fatal day, a day of sad presage
To us survivers of this present Age:
The hour of thy decease when Sun went down,
When light turn'd dark, when heavens began to frown.
'Tis ominous to us who saw his light,
That Grace provok'd should turn our day to night;
And Gospels light which shineth from on high,
Should clouded be, and darkned in our skie.
O happy dayes, when such Lights shine on Earth!
O bitter dayes, when they are hid beneath!
This is our grief, He which late shin'd on high
Is hid in grave, and now beneath doth lye.
Let Hartford *sigh, and say,* I've lost a Treasure;
Let all New-England *mourn at Gods Displeasure,*

In

In taking from us one more gracious,
Then is the Gold of Ophir *precious.*
Sweet was the savour which his grace did give,
It season'd *all the place where he did live:*
His Name did as an Ointment give it's smell,
And all bare witness that it savour'd well.
Wisdome, Love, Meekness, Friendly Courtesie,
Each Moral Virtue, *with* rare Pietie,
Pure Zeal, *yet mixt with* mildest Clemency,
Did all conspire in this one Breast *to lye.*
Deep was his Knowledge, Judgement *was acute;*
His Doctrine *solid, which none could confute.*
To Minde *he gave light of intelligence,*
And search'd the corners of the Conscience:
To Sinners *stout, which no Law could bring under,*
To them he was a Son of dreadful Thunder,
When all strong Oaks of Bashan *us'd to quake,*
And fear did Lebanus his Cedars *shake;*
The stoutest Hearts he filled full of fears,
He clave the Rocks, *they melted into tears.*
Yet to sad Souls, *with sense of Sin cast down,*
He was a Son of Consolation.
Sweet peace he gave to such as were contrite;
Their darkness sad he turn'd to joyous light.
Of Preaching *he had learn'd the rightest Art,*
To every one dividing his own part.
Each Ear that heard him said, He spake to me:
So piercing was his holy Ministrie.
His Life *did shine, Times Changes stain'd it not,*
Envy it self could not there finde a spot.
Had he surviv'd to finish Works begun,
'T had been a Blessing to all Christendome:
Then should the world have known what God had show'd him,
And what themselves for all his Works *had ow'd him.*
But this unthankfull Age is now cut short
Of that rich Treasure, *'cause they car'd not for't.*

O that

O that his love may turn us, yet to prize
The bleſſings yet enjoy'd: herein be wiſe;
Leſt that which he not long ago foretold,
Be now in us fulfil'd, as 'twas of old,
That wantonneſs of Churches, would bereave
Them of their Miniſters, without their leave.
God plaguing this his meſſengers contempt,
With this ſoul-ſtroying Plague and Puniſhment:
But whatſoever wrath doth us abide,
Whatever plague for ſin doth us betide,
Yet thou, O bleſſed Saint, art now at reſt,
I'th boſom of thy Chriſt which is the beſt:
Bathing in rivers of divine pleaſure,
Which is at Gods right hand, moſt ſweet and pure;
Taſting the fruit of all thy labours ſpent,
To honour God which was thy whole intent.
From God thou camſt forth, who ſent thee hither
And now hath call'd thee back to live together;
Him didſt thou ſerve, while life *and* breath *did laſt,*
With him now bleſt, while life *and* breath *is paſt.*
Senſe of our loſs *would call thee back again,*
But out of love, *we bid thee there remain,*
Till we yet left behinde our courſe fulfil,
To meet thee on the top of Zion *hill;*
When thou and we ſhall both rejoyce together,
So faſt united as no death ſhall ſever;
Both to ſing praiſes to our heavenly King,
Who hath us ſaved from deaths poiſonous ſting,
And will reſtore our bodies from the grave,
Which them to duſt of death conſumed have;
Making them ſhine, like brightneſs of the Sun
With Glory, *ne'r to end when once begun.*
Let Heaven, *and* Earth, Angels, *and* Men *him praiſe,*
Sounding his Glory *paſt all length of* dayes.

1648.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*: And

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *William Thomas*,
} were chosen his Assistants in Government.

1649.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Miles Standish*
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
And
Mr. *William Thomas*,
} were Chosen his Assistants in Government.

This Year Mr. *John Winthrop* Governour of the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusets* deceased, the twenty sixth day of *March*, about ten of the clock. He was singular for Piety, Wisdom, and of a publick spirit; he brought over a great estate into the Country, and partly by his liberality, & partly by the unfaithfulness of his Baily, spent the most part of it; so as when he died, he was

The death of Mr. Winthrop.

was but low in that reſpect: and yet notwithſtanding, very much honoured and beloved of the moſt, and continued in the place of Governour for the moſt part until his death, which was much lamented by many. He was a man of unbyaſſed Juſtice, patient in reſpect of perſonal wrongs and injuries, a great lover of the Saints, eſpecially able Miniſters of the Goſpel; very ſober in deſiring, and temperate in improving earthly contentments; very humble, courteous, and ſtudious of general good. His body was with great ſolemnity and honour, buried at *Boſton* in *New-England*, the third of *April*, 1649.

This year ſome parts of the Country was much troubled with numerable hoſts of *Caterpillers*, which deſtroyed the fruits of the earth in divers places; and did eat off the leaves of the trees, ſo as they looked as bare as if it had been winter: and in ſome places did eat the leaves from off the Peaſe ſtraw, and did not eat the Peaſe. It pleaſed God to give them a check, and a rebuke, ſo as they hurt but in ſome places, and of his goodneſs in ſhort time removed them.

An innumerable company of caterpillers in ſome parts of the Country.

This Year *Auguſt* 25. that faithful and eminent ſervant of Chriſt Mr. *Thomas Shepard* died, who was a ſoul-ſearching Miniſter of the Goſpel, and Paſtor of the Church of Chriſt at *Cambridge*. By his death not only that Church and people, but alſo all *New-England* ſuſtained a very great loſs: he not only preached the Goſpel profitably and very ſucceſſively, but alſo hath left behinde him divers worthy works of ſpecial uſe, in reference unto the clearing up the ſtate of the ſoul to God-ward; the benefit thereof, thoſe can beſt experience, who are moſt converſant in the improving of them, and have Gods bleſſing on them therein to their ſouls good. His body was honourably buried at *Cambridge* in *New-England*.

Bleſſed are the dead that die in the Lord, for their works follow them, Rev. 13. 13.

This Year there paſſed an Act of Parliament in *England*, for the promoting and propagating the Goſpel of Jeſus Chriſt amongſt the *Indians* in *New-England*, in reference unto the furtherance and advancement of ſo good a work, a Corpora-

tion of sixteen Select men were appointed, consisting of a President, Treasurer, and Assistants, called by the name of the President and Society for the propagation of the Gospel in *New-England*, to receive such sums of money, as from time to time was, or should be collected and raised by the liberal contributions of such as whose hearts God was pleased to stir up to so glorious a work; and it was by the same Parliament Enacted, that the Commissioners for the United Colonies of *New-England*, for the time being, by themselves or such as they shall appoint, shall have Power and Authority to receive and dispose of the said *monies* brought in & paid to the said Treasurer for the time being, or any other Monies, Goods or Commodities acquired and delivered by the care of the said Corporation at any time: whose receipt or receipts of such Person or Persons so Authorized by them, shall be a sufficient discharge to the said Corporation and Treasurer. The particulars of such Orders and Instructions, with which the said Act is invested, the Reader may be more amply satisfied in, by the perusal thereof, as it is extant bearing date, *July* 27. 1649.

Moreover, let the Reader take notice of the special favour of Almighty God, in moving the heart of the *Kings Majesty*, since his Restitution to his Crown and Regal Dignity, particularly of his Royal Favour to countenance this work, and to secure what hath been, and what may be given toward this work, by a legal settlement, which before was wanting; so as the said glorious design hath been vigorously carried on, both in *Old England* and in *New*, by such active and faithful Instruments as God hath raised up and improved therein, with some considerable success. The work coming on to such perfection, as that the Holy Bible is Translated and Printed in the *Indian Language*, whereby the glad tidings of the Gospel is, and may be communicated to them with the greater facility: some souls also of them being gained (as may be hoped) to believe on the Lord Jesus for life everlasting; and daily hopes of further and greater success in that behalf, for which unspeakable riches of his grace, let his Holy Name have all the praise throughout all ages.

The

N.

The Principal Instruments improved in Preaching the Gospel of Christ unto the *Indians*, are

Mr. *John Eliot* Senior.
Mr. *John Eliot* Junior.
Mr. *Thomas Mayhew*.
Mr. *Pierson*.
Mr. *Brown*.
Mr. *James*.
Mr. *Cotton*.

Besides divers of their own Nation, whose Names and number I know not.

1650.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Edward Winslow*,
Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*, and
Mr. *William Thomas*,
} Chosen Assistants to him in Government.

This Year there was more then ordinary mortality in the Country, especially about *Boston*, and mostly amongst their Children: since which time, several diseases have been in the Country more frequently then formerly; as namely, gripings in the bowels, with violent Vomiting and Purging, which hath taken away many: as also a disease in the Mouth or Throat, which

New diseases the fruits of new sins.

which hath proved mortal to ſome in a very ſhort time; as alſo great diſtempers of Colds, *&c.* which ought to be awakening diſpenſations, together with others, to cauſe us to conſider and examine, whether we have not provoked the Lord with ſome general and unwonted ſins; inaſmuch as he is pleaſed to exerciſe the Country oft-times with unwonted afflictions and puniſhments.

1651.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth:*

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Captain *Miles Standiſh*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas Willet*,
} were Choſen his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year Mr. *William Thomas* expired his natural life, in much peace and comfort: he ſerved in the place of Magiſtracy in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth* divers Years; he was a well approved and a well grounded Chriſtian; well read in the Holy Scriptures, and other approved Authors, and a good lover and approver of Godly Miniſters and good Chriſtians, and one that had a ſincere deſire to promote the common good both of Church and State. He died of a Conſumption, and was honourably buried at *Marſhfield*, in the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth.*

Mr. William Thomas *his death.*

1652.

1652.

THis year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth.* And

Mr. *Thomas Prince,*
Capt. *Myles Standish,*
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly,*
Mr. *John Brown,*
Mr. *John Alden,*
Captain *Thomas Willet,* &
Lieut. *Thomas Southworth*

Were Chosen his Assistants in Government.

This Year that blessed Servant of God, Mr. *John Cotton* died; he was sometimes Preacher of Gods Word at *Boston* in *Lincolnshire,* and from thence came over into *New-England,* in the Year 1633, and was chosen Teacher of the first Church of Christ at *Boston*: for which Function and Office, he was greatly enriched with gifts & abilities, being an able expounder, and faithful applier of the Word of God, furnished also with wisdom and prudence to go before the Church, in the ordering of the affairs thereof; endowed also with meekness of spirit, whereby he was fitted to compose such differences as did at any time arise amongst them: he was very patient also in respect unto personal wrongs or injuries done unto himself, yea, towards his sharpest Antagonists. An influence of good, not only flowed from him unto the Church over whom he was set, but also into all the Churches in *New-England* (as necessity required.) About the time of his sickness, there appeared in the Heavens, over *New-England,* a *Comet,* giving a dim light; and so waxed dimmer and dimmer, until it became quite extinct and went out, which time of its being extinct, was soon after the time of the period of his life: it being a very signal testimony, that God had then removed a bright Star, a burning and shining light out of

Of Mr. Cottons *Life,* Mr. Norton *hath Penned a Book whereunto I refer the Reader for more full relation of the same.*

A Comet seen at the time of Mr. Cottons *sickness, and went out soon after his death.*

of the heaven of his Church here, unto Cœleſtial glory above. He was buried at *Boſton* in *New-England*, with great Honour and Lamentation, in the Year above written.

Upon whoſe never enough deplored death, were made theſe Verſes following.

A Funeral Elegie upon the death of the truely Reverend Mr. *John Cotton*, late Teacher of the Church of Chriſt at *Boſton* in *New-Fngland*.

AND *after* Winthrop's, Hooker's, Shepard's *Herſe,*
Doth Cotton's *death call for a mourning Verſe?*
Thy Will be done: yet Lord *who dealeſt thus,*
Make this great death expedient for us.
Luther *pull'd down the* Pope, Calvin *the* Prelate *flue:*
Of Calvin's *Lapſe, chief cure to* Cotton's *due.*
Cotton *whoſe* Learning, Temper, Godlineſs,
The German Phœnix *lively did expreſs.*
Melancthon's *all, may* Luthers *word but paſs;*
Melancthons *all, in our great* Cotton *was.*
Then him in fleſh, ſcarce dwelt a better one:
So great's our loſs, when ſuch a Spirit's gone.
Whil'ſt He was here, Life *was more* Life *to me;*
Now He is not, Death *hence leſs* Death *ſhall be.*
That Comets, *great Mens deaths do oft forego,*
This preſent Comet *doth too ſadly ſhow.*
This Prophet *dead, yet muſt in's* Doctrine *ſpeak,*
This Comet *ſaith, elſe muſt* New-England *break.*
What ere it be, the Heavens avert it far,
That Meteors *ſhould ſucceed our greateſt* Star.
In Boſtons *Orb,* Winthrop *and* Cotton *were;*
Theſe Lights extinct, dark is our Hemiſphere.
In Boſton *once how much ſhin'd of our glory,*
We now lament, Poſterity will ſtory.

Let

Let Boston *live, who had, and saw their worth:*
And did them Honour, both in life and death,
To him New-England *trust in this distress,*
Who will not leave his exiles comfortless.

J. N.

Upon the TOMB of the most Reverend Mr. *John Cotton*, late Teacher of the Church of *Boston* in *New-England*.

HEre lies magnanimous Humility,
Majesty, Meekness; Christian Apathy
On soft Affections: Liberty in thrall;
A Noble Spirit, Servant unto all.
Learnings great Master-piece; who yet would sit
As a Disciple at his Schollars feet.
A simple Serpent, or Serpentine Dove,
Made up of Wisdome, Innocence, and Love.
Neatness Embroider'd with it self *alone;*
And Civils Canonized in a Gown:
Embracing old and young, and low and high;
Ethicks imbodyed in Divinity:
Ambitious to be lowest, and to raise
His Brethrens Honour on his own Decayes.
Thus doth the Sun *retire into his bed,*
That being gone, the Stars *may shew their head.*
Could wound at Argument without Division;
Cut to the quick, and yet make no Incision;
Ready to Sacrifice Domestick Notions
To Churches Peace, and Ministers Devotions.
Himself indeed (and singular in that)
Whom all admired, he admired not.
Liv'd like an Angel of a Mortal Birth,
Conners'd in Heaven while he was on Earth:
Though not (as Moses*) radiant with Light,*
Whose Glory dazell'd the beholders sight;

Yet so divinely beautifi'd, you'd count
He had been born and bred upon the Mount.
A living breathing Bible: Tables where
Both Covenants at large engraven were;
Gospel *and* Law *in's Heart had each its Columne*
His Head an Index to the Sacred Volume.
His very Name a Title Page; *and next,*
His Life a Commentary *on the Text.*
O what a Monument of glorious worth,
When in a New Edition *he comes forth*
Without Errata's, *may we think hee'll be,*
In Leaves *and* Covers *of Eternitie!*
A man of Might at heavenly Eloquence,
To fix the Ear, and charm the Conscience;
As if Apollos *were reviv'd in him,*
Or he had learned of a Seraphim.
Spake many Tongues in one: one Voice and Sense
Wrought Joy and Sorrow, Fear and Confidence.
Rocks rent before him, Blinde receiv'd their sight;
Souls levell'd to the dunghil, stood upright.
Infernal Furies burst with rage to see
Their Pris'ners captiv'd into Libertie.
A Star *that in our Eastern* England rose,
Thence hurry'd by the Blast of stupid foes,
Whose foggy Darkness, and benummed Senses,
Brook'd not his daz'ling fervent Influences.
Thus did he move on Earth from East to West;
There he went down, and up to Heaven for Rest.
Nor from himself, whilst living doth he vary,
His Death hath made him an Ubiquitary:
Where is his Sepulchre is hard to tell,
Who in a thousand Sepulchres doth dwell;
(*Their* Hearts, *I mean, whom he hath left behind,*)
In them his Sacred Relique's now Enshrin'd.
But let his Mourning Flock be comforted,
Though Moses *be, yet* Joshua *is not dead:*

I mean

I mean Renowned NORTON, *worthy hee*
Succeſſor to our MOSES *is to bee,*
O happy Iſrael *in* AMERICA,
In ſuch a MOSES *ſuch a* JOSHUA.

B. W.

1653.

MR. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Captain *Miles Standiſh*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas Willet*, &
Lieut. *Thomas Southworth*,
} were Choſen his Aſſiſtants in Government.

Mr. *Thomas Dudley*, who was a principal Founder and Pillar of the Colony of the *Maſſachuſets* in *New-England*, and ſundry times Governour and Deputy Governour of that Juriſdiction, died at his houſe in *Roxbury*, July 31. in the ſeventy ſeventh Year of his age: he was a perſon of quick underſtanding, and ſolid Judgement in the fear of the Lord; he was a lover of (1) Juſtice. (2) Order. (3) the People. (4) Chriſtian Religion; the ſupream virtues of a good Magiſtrate. 1. His love to Juſtice appeared at all times, and in ſpecial upon the Judgement ſeat, without reſpect of perſons in Judgement: and in his own particular tranſactions, with all men he was exact and exemplary. 2. His zeal to Order appeared in contriving good Laws, and faithfully executing them upon criminal offenders, Hereticks, and Underminers of true Religion. He had a piercing Judgement to diſcover the Wolf, though cloathed

with a ſheep-skin. 3. His love to the People was evident in ſerving them in a publick capacity many Years, at his own coſt, and that as a nurſing Father to the Churches of Chriſt. 4. He loved the true Chriſtian Religion, and the pure Worſhip of God, and cheriſhed as in his boſom, all godly Miniſters and Chriſtians: he was exact in the practice of Piety, in his perſon and family all his life; in a word, he lived deſired, and died lamented by all good men.

The Verſes following were found in his Pocket after his death, which may further illuſtrate his Character, and give a taſte of his poetical fancy: wherein (it is ſaid) he did excel.

Dim Eyes, deaf Ears, cold ſtomack ſhew
My diſſolution is in view.
Eleven times ſeven near liv'd have I,
And now God calls, I willing die:
My Shuttle's ſhot, my race is run,
My Sun is ſet, my Deed is done;
My Span is meaſur'd, Tale is told,
My Flower is faded and grown old,
My Dream is vaniſh'd, Shadow's fled,
My Soul with Chriſt, my Body dead.
Farewel dear Wife, Children, and Friends,
Hate Hereſie, make bleſſed ends;
Bear Poverty, live with good men,
So ſhall we meet with joy agen.

Let men of God in Courts and Churches watch
O're ſuch as do a Toleration hatch;
Leſt that ill Egg bring forth a Cockatrice,
To payſon all with Hereſie and Vice.
If men be left and otherwiſe combine,
My Epitaph's, I dy'd no Libertine.

This Year Mr. *John Laythrop* did put off his Earthly Tabernacle: He was ſometimes Preacher of Gods Word in *Egerton*

in

in *Kent*, from whence he went to *London*, and was choſen Paſtor of a Church of Chriſt there; he was greatly troubled & impriſoned for witneſſing againſt the errours of the times: during the time of his impriſonment, his wife fell ſick, of which ſickneſs ſhe died. He procured liberty of the Biſhop to viſit his Wife, before her death, and commended her to God by Prayer, who ſoon after gave up the ghoſt: at his return to Priſon, his poor Children being many, repaired to the Biſhop to *Lambeth*, and made known unto him their miſerable condition, by reaſon of their good Father his being continued in cloſe durance; who commiſerated their condition ſo far, as to grant him his liberty, who ſoon after came over into *New-England*, and ſetled for ſome time at the Town of *Scituate*, and was choſen Paſtour of their Church, and faithfully diſpenſed the Word of God amongſt them: and afterwards the ſaid Church dividing, a part whereof removing to *Barnſtable*, he removed with them, and there remained until his death. He was a man of an humble and broken heart and ſpirit, lively in diſpenſation of the Word of God; ſtudious of peace, furniſhed with godly contentment; willing to ſpend and to be ſpent for the Cauſe and Church of Chriſt. He fell aſleep in the Lord, *Nov.* 8. 1653.

1654.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Captain *Miles Standiſh*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *John Alden*, and
Capt. *Thomas Willet*,
were Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

1655.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Elected Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Captain *Miles Standish*
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Brown*,
Mr. *John Alden*, and
Captain *Thomas Willet*,
} were Chosen Assistants to him in Government.

The death of Mr. Winslow. This year that Worthy and Honourable Gentleman Mr. *Edward Winslow* deceased; of whom I have had occasion to make honourable mention formerly in this Discourse. He was the Son of *Edward Winslow* Esq; of the Town of *Draughtwich* in the County of *Worcester*: He travelling into the *Low-Countreys*, in his Journeys fell into atquaintance with the Church of *Leyden* in *Holland*, unto whom he joyned, and with whom he continued until they parted to come into *New-England*, he coming with that part that came first over, and became a very worthy and useful Instrument amongst them, both in the place of Government and otherwise, until his last Voyage for *England*, being sent on special Imployment for the Government of the *Massachusets*, as is forementioned in this Book; and afterwards was imployed as one of the grand Commissioners in that unhappy Design against *Domingo* in *Hispaniola*, who taking grief for the ill success of that Enterprize; on which, together with some other Infirmities that were upon him, he fell sick at Sea betwixt *Domingo* and *Jamaica*, and died the eighth day of *May*, which was about the Sixty first year of his life, and his Body was honourably committed to the Sea, with the usual Solemnity of the Discharge of Fourty two Piece of Ordnance.

One

One of the Company who was imployed in taking notice of the Particulars of that Tragedy, gave such Testimony of the said Mr. *VVinslow*, as followeth in this Poem:

The Eighth of May, *west from* Spaniola *shore,*
God took from us our Grand Commissioner,
Winslow *by Name, a man in Chiefest Trust,*
VVhose Life was sweet, and Conversation just;
VVhose Parts and wisdome most men did excell:
An honour to his Place, as all can tell.

1656.

THis Year Mr. *William Bradford* was Chosen Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *Thomas Prince*,
Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*;
Captain *Miles Standish*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Capt. *Thomas Willet*, &
Capt. *James Cudworth*,
} were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.

This Year Captain *Miles Standish* expired his mortal life: He was a Gentleman, born in *Lancashire*, and was Heir-Apparent unto a great Estate of Lands and Livings, surreptitiously detained from him; his great Grandfather being a Second or Younger Brother from the House of *Standish*. In his younger time he went over into the *Low-Countreys*, and was a Souldier there, and came acquainted with the Church of *Leyden*, and came over into *New-England* with such of them as at the first set out for the Planting of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, and bare a deep share of their first Difficulties, and was alwayes

The death of Capt. Standish.

always very faithful to their Intereſt: He growing ancient, became ſick of the *Stone* or *Strangullion*; whereof, after his ſuffering of much dolorous pain, he fell aſleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at *Duxbury*.

1657.

THis year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*.

This Election was on the fifth of June *1657. & M.* William Bradford *died the 9th of* May *in this year before this Election.*

Mr. *VVilliam Collier*,
Mr. *Timothy Hatherly*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas VVillet*,
Capt. *James Cudworth*,
Capt. *Joſias VVinſlow*, &
Lieut. *Tho: Southworth*,
} Were Choſen his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year it pleaſed God to put a period to the life of his precious Servant Mr. *VVilliam Bradford*, who was the ſecond Governour of the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*, and continued in the ſame place for the moſt part of his time, with little intermiſſion. Concerning whom, the following Poems made, the one by himſelf, and the other by ſuch as were well acquainted with his Worth and Excellency, will give a large Teſtimony thereof.

Certain Verſes left by the Honoured *VVilliam Bradford* Eſq; Governour of the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*, penned by his own hand, declaring the gracious diſpenſation of Gods Providence towards him in the time of his Life, and his preparation and fittedneſs for Death.

FRom my years young in dayes of Youth,
God did make known to me his Truth,

And

And call'd me from my Native place
For to enjoy the Means of Grace.
In Wilderneſs *he did me guide,*
And in ſtrange Lands *for me provide.*
In Fears *and* Wants, *through* Weal *and* Woe,
As Pilgrim *paſt I to and fro:*
Oft left of them whom I did truſt;
How vain it is to reſt on Duſt!
A man of Sorrows *I have been,*
And many Changes *I have ſeen.*
Wars, Wants, Peace, Plenty *have I known;*
And ſome advanc'd, *others* thrown down.
The humble, poor, cheerful *and* glad,
Rich, diſcontent, ſower *and* ſad:
When Fears *with* Sorrows *have been mixt,*
Conſolations *came betwixt.*
Faint not, poor Soul, *in God ſtill truſt,*
Fear not the things thou ſuffer muſt;
For, whom he loves he doth chaſtiſe,
And then all Tears wipes from their eyes.
Farewell, dear Children, *whom I love,*
Your better Father *is above:*
When I am gone, he can ſupply;
To him I leave you when I dye.
Fear him in Truth, *walk in his* Wayes,
And he will bleſs you all your dayes.
My dayes are ſpent, Old Age *is come,*
My Strength *it fails, my* Glaſs *near run:*
Now I will wait when work is done,
Untill my happy Change *ſhall come,*
When from my labours I ſhall reſt
With Chriſt above for to be bleſt.

By the honoured, Major *Josias Winslow*, on the the said Mr. *William Bradford*, as followeth:

WILLIAM BRADFORD. Anagr.

I made Law for Bridl'.
For Law I made Bridl'.

SEe how God honoured hath this worthy's Name,
To make it spell his Virtue, and proclame
His rare Endowments, *us'd for* God *and* Us:
Now such as honour God, hee'll honour thus.

Both Just, *and* Gentle, Merciful, *and* Just,
And yet a Man, *and yet compos'd of* Dust?
Yes, God within these slender walls *can finde*
A Noble, Virtuous, Studious, Active Minde.

God was the Guider *of his* Childhood, Youth;
God did preserve *him ever in the* Truth,
And gave him grace to own Him when but yong,
Whom afterward he made a Champion strong

For to defend *his* People, *and his* Cause,
By Wisdome, Justice, Prudence, *and by* Laws;
And most of all by his own good Example,
A Patern *fit to imitate most ample.*

If we should trace him from the first, we finde
He flies his Country, *leaves his* Friends *behinde*,
To follow God, *and to profess his* Wayes,
And here encounters Hardships *many dayes.*

He is content (*with* Moses) *if God please*,
(*Renouncing* Honour, Profit, Pleasure, Ease)
To suffer Tossings *and* Unsettlements,
And (*if their Rage doth rise*) *to* Banishments;

He

He weighs it not, so he may still preserve
His Conscience clear, *and with* Gods People *serve*
Him freely, 'cording to his minde and will;
If not in one place, *hee'll go forward still.*

If God have Work *for him i'th'* Ends of th' Earth,
Safe, Danger, Hunger, Colds, *nor any* Dearth,
A howling Wilderness, *nor* Salvage men,
Discourage him, hee'll follow God agen.

And how God hath made him an Instrument
To us of quiet Peace *and* Settlement,
I need not speak; the eldest, youngest *know*
God honour'd him with greater Work *then so.*

To sum up all, in this still he went hence,
This man was wholly God's: *His* Recompence
Remains beyond expression, and he is
Gone to possess it in Eternall Bliss.

Hee's happy, happy thrice; unhappy we
That still remain more Changes *here to see:*
Let's not lament that God hath taken him
From Troubles *hence, in* Seas of Joyes *to swim.*

Let's not lament his gracious Life *is ended,*
And he to Life of Glory *is attended;*
Nor let us grieve that now Gods Work is done,
In making him a happy blessed one.

But let's bewail that we have so neglected
Duty to God; *or* men *have disrespected,*
With earnest Lamentations *let's lament,*
And whiles we may let's seriously Repent,

That we have not improved as we might,
For God, *and for* our ſelves, *this worthy Wight;*
And now that God hath Moſes *ta'ne away,*
Let's pray that he would give us Joſhua

To go before the Camp, *and to ſubdue*
God's *and his* People's foes; *whatever* Crew
Oppoſe our Journeys *to that* Land of Reſt,
Which till obtain'd, we're never truely bleſt.

And for our better progreſs in this courſe,
Let now our great Neceſſity *enforce*
Each man to ſtudy Peace, *and to improve*
His greateſt ſtrength to re-unite in Love
The Hearts *and the* Affections *of us all,*
Leſt by our fault Gods Work *to th'ground ſhould fall.*

W *hy mourns the People thus for me, ſince I*
I *n Heavens dwell ſhall to Eternity?*
L *et not ſo many Tears fall from my Friends;*
L *ive holy, happy, God will recompenſe*
I *nto your boſomes all your love again,*
A *nd your affections whiles I did remain*
M *ongſt you, but now you muſt refrain.*

B *Ear up your hearts,* dear hearts, *when thoughts of me*
R *un in your mindes, with this, The time will be,*
A *nd every hower brings it on apace,*
D *ear friends, when we for ever ſhall imbrace.*
F *arewell but for a ſeaſon then, farewell;*
O *ur next Embraces ſhall the reſt excell.*
R *eſt happy,* Children, Friends, *and* Tender Wife,
D *eath but begins the godly's* happy Life.

A few

A few Verſes more added by one that was well acquainted with the Worth of the ſaid Mr. *William Bradford.*

THe Ninth of May, *about Nine of the Clock,*
A precious one God out of Plimouth *took:*
Governour Bradford *then expir'd his breath,*
Was call'd away by force of cruel Death.
A man approv'd in Town, *in* Church, *in* Court,
Who ſo behav'd himſelf in godly ſort
For the full ſpace of Thirty ſeven years,
As he was means of turning many fears
Away from thee, poor Plimouth, *where he ſpent*
The better part of time that God him lent.
Well skill'd he was in Regulating Laws,
So as by Law he could defend the Cauſe
Of poor diſtreſſed Plaintiff, *when he brought*
His Caſe before him, and for help beſought.
Above all other men, he loved thoſe
Who Goſpel-truths moſt faithfully uncloſe,
Who were with Grace and Learning fully fraught,
Such as laboriouſly the Goſpel taught:
Willing alſo to own in his due place
The meaneſt Saint, expreſſing gifts of grace.
Sweet Brewſter *he is gone ſome time before,*
Wiſe Winſlow *whoſe death we lament ſo ſore,*
And faithful Standiſh *freed from horrid pain,*
To be with Chriſt, in truth the greateſt gain:
Now bleſſed holy Bradford, *a Succeſſor*
Of bleſſed holy Bradford *the* Confeſſor,
Is gone to place of Reſt, with many more
Of precious ones, whom I might name great ſtore,
And Commendation of each one have given;
But what needs that? their Names are writ in Heaven.
And now, dear Lord, let us our time improve,
To be with thee in Prayer much above.

Oh save thy People, help in time of need;
When all meuns fails, be thou in room and stead
Of other helps, who fail when needed most;
When greatest need, they then give up the ghost.
And let thy Servants their time still imploy,
That in the end they may attain such joy
As may a fruit of true Believing bee,
That we with Christ may reign Eternallie.

This Worthy Gentleman was interred with the greatest solemnities that the Jurisdiction to which he belonged was in a capacity to perform: many deep sighs, as well as loud volleys of shot, declaring that the People were no less sensible of their own loss, who were surviving, then mindful of the worth and honour of him that was deceased; you might now easily discern a heavy heart in the mournful countenance of every sober minded and considerate man: for as you have heard in the three or four Years last past, God was pleased greatly to weaken this poor tottering Colony of *Plimouth*, by taking away several of the most usefull Props thereof, both in Church and Civil State, some others who had been of singular use, now stooping under the infirmities of old age, could not be so serviceable as in times past, and others removed so far from the center of the Government, that they could not without great difficulties attend their publick concerns, nor could possibly so constantly as our necessities required, which did greatly aggravate our troubles: we were become weak, when we had need of greatest strength, had lost many of our Chieftains, when we stood in need of the best conduct and guidance: for besides the troubles and changes that then attended our Native Country, and might call for great circumspection in our walking in relation unto them; we had also at this very time, some amongst us that growing weary of the long peace and concord that we had enjoyed, and hoping to fish better in troubled waters, when their bait might be taken in, and the hook not easily discerned, would willingly have been ringing

ringing the Changes in this Juriſdiction alſo, pretending a great zeal for liberty of Conſcience, but endeavouring to introduce ſuch a liberty of Will, as would have proved prejudicial, if not deſtructive to Civil and Church ſocieties: and at the ſame time there arrived in the ſaid Colony many of that pernicious ſect called *Quakers*, whoſe Opinion are a compoſition of many errors, and whoſe practices tend greatly to the diſturbance both of Church and State; many unſtable people amongſt us were leavened with their errors, and proved very troubleſome to this as well as other Colonies in *New-England*. But the Lord many times delighteth to appear in the Mount of his Peoples miſeries, diſtreſſes and troubles, that his power and wiſdom may appear when they are weakeſt, and that they may know that their ſalvation is from him. At ſuch a time, & when the condition of this Colony was ſuch as hath been declared, God was pleaſed to minde it, even in its low eſtate, and when he had taken to himſelf not only our *Moſes*, but many of the Elders and Worthies of our *Iſrael*, he hath not hitherto left us without a *Joſhua* to lead us in the remaining part of our pilgrimage. When the uſual time for the renewing of our Election of ſuch as ſhould govern us came, Mr. *Thomas Prince* was by unanimous vote choſen Governour; and although mens ſpirits were ſo diſtempered as I have related, and it might have been expected that they would have been much divided in their choice; yet God (who diſpoſeth the lot that is caſt into the lap) ſo diſpoſed that all their votes centered there: a good demonſtration that he was choſen of God for us, and by his bleſſing made an Inſtrument of much peace and ſettlement in this place, and to this people, in theſe times of trouble and confuſion. The Lord alſo directing the Freemen of this Juriſdiction at the ſame time in their Election to the choice of a diſcreet and able Council, to be aſſiſtant unto our ſaid honoured Governor in this ſo weighty Work, divers of them being deſcended of ſeveral of the honour'd Magiſtrates deceaſed; not only bearing their Names, but having a large meaſure of their Spirit beſtowed on them, befitting them for ſuch Work; ſo as through the goodneſs of God, thoſe

ſtorms

storms that seem'd to threaten the subversion of our All, and did at first prevaile, to the disturbing and shaking of many Towns and Churches, and to the great discouragement of the Ministers in divers places, do seem to be pretty well blown over; such uncomfortable jarrs (as have been sometimes thought uncureable) seem to be throughly reconciled and healed, our Towns for the most part supplied with godly and able Ministers, and we sit under our Vines and Figtrees in peace, enjoying both Civil and Religious Liberties: For which goodness of the Lord, let his holy Name be praised; and may he grant us so to improve our present opportunities, as he may have some suitable returns, and we may have cause to hope in his grace for the continuance of such favours.

This Year that much honoured and worthy Gentleman, Mr. *Theophilus Eaton*, Governour of *New-Haven*, deceased; who was very Eminent both on a Religious and Civil account: His death proved a great blow to that Jurisdiction, and was seconded (not long after) with the loss of another precious man amongst them, *viz.* Mr. *Francis Newman*.

The loss of Mr. Garrets Ship.

In this year 1657, in the moneth of *November*, Mr. *Garret* set sail on a Voyage for *England* from *Boston*; in whose Ship, amongst many considerable Passengers, there went Mr. *Thomas Mayhew* junior, of *Martins-Vineyard*, who was a very precious man: he was well skill'd, and had attained to a great proficiency in the *Indian Language*, and had a great propensity upon his Spirit to promote Gods glory in their Conversion, whose Labours God blessed for the doing of much good amongst them; in which respect he was very much missed amongst them, and bewailed by them: as also in reference unto the Preaching of Gods Word amongst the *English* there. The loss of him was very great. Many other sad losses befell sundry others in the Country by the loss of that Ship, both in their Estates and dear Relations, to the great grief and sadning of the hearts of many.

1658.

THis year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Elected Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*.

Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas Willet*,
Capt. *Joſias Winſlow*,
Lieut. *Tho: Southworth*,
Mr. *William Bradford*, &
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley*,
} Were Elected his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year there was a very great Earthquake in *New-England*.

Alſo Mr. *Ralph Partridge* died in a good old Age, having for the ſpace of fourty years diſpenſed the Word of God with very little impediment by ſickneſs: His pious and blameleſs life became very advantagious to his Doctrine; he was much honoured and loved by all that converſed with him. He was of a ſound and ſolid judgement in the main Truths of Jeſus Chriſt, and very able in Diſputation to defend them; he was very ſingular in this, That notwithſtanding the pauſity and poverty of his Flock, he continued in his Work amongſt them to the end of his life. He went to his grave in peace, *as a ſhock of Corn fully ripe*, and was honourably buried at *Duxbury*.

In whoſe Remembrance, one who was a true Admirer of his worth, preſented theſe at his Funerall.

NOt Rage, *but* Age; *not* Age, *but* Gods Decree,
Did call me hence, my Saviour Chriſt to ſee,
And to embrace, and from his hand receive
My Crown of Glory: *Oh who would not leave*
A flattering World, *nay* Friends, *or what's moſt dear,*
The Saints Communion *that's enjoyed here,*

At once to have God, Christ, Saints, Angels *all*,
To make compleat, and sum our Joyes to all?
Now I behold Gods Glory face to face;
Now I sit down with Christ, who've run my Race;
Now I sing praise to God, and to the Lamb;
Now I Companion to the Angels am;
Now I behold with greatest joy my Sons
And Daughters all; I mean Converted ones,
Which I was instrumentall in my place
To bring to God, but all of his Free-grace.
How am I Changed! that of late was weak,
Above the force of Satan now to break?
How am I Changed! Son of sorrow *late,*
But now triumphing in my heavenly state.
How was I vex'd with pains, with griefs molested!
How in a moment am I now Invested
With Royal Robes, with Crowns, with Diadems,
With Gods Eternall Loves? Such precious Gems
He hath in store for them his Saints that are;
For such indeed he counts his Jewels rare.
Oh Brethren, Sisters, Neighbours, Country, Friends,
I'me now above you: Hark to them God sends,
As yet surviving in their worthy Charge,
Whose work it is Gods Vineyard to enlarge.
God and my Conscience, your experience knows,
Whiles I was with you, I was one of those
That labour'd faithfully Gods Vineyard in,
Sowing his Seed, and plucking up of Sin.
Now is the Harvest to my self indeed;
The Lord grant a supply of one to feed
Your Soules with heavenly food, and one to lead
In wayes of God, untill his Courts you tread.
Next to Gods love, my Flock, *love one another;*
And next to Christ, preserve love to thy Brother.
Let ever precious be in your esteem
Gods holy Word; *and such as slight it, deem*

Of

Of Serpents brood: *whatever they pretend,*
By no means to ſuch Blaſphemies attend.
Decline all wanderings, *leſt from all you ſtray;*
If ſtept aſide, return in this your day:
Keep cloſe to God, ſo he that is Moſt High
Shall you preſerve as Apple of his Eye.
And give you peace, on Earth Tranquillity,
Manſions in Heaven to Eternity;
VVhere we that Death doth for a time now ſever,
Shall meet, embrace, and ſhall not part for ever.

R *un is his Race,*
A *nd his work done;*
L *eft Earthly place,*
P *artridge is gone,*
H *e's with the Father and the Son.*

P *ure joyes and conſtant do attend*
A *ll that ſo live, ſuch is their end.*
R *eturn he ſhall with Chriſt agen,*
T *o Judge both juſt and ſinful men.*
R *ais'd is this Bird of Paradiſe:*
I *oy Heaven entred breaks the ice.*
D *eath under foot he trodden hath;*
G *race is to Glory ſtraiteſt Path,*
E *ver enjoyes Love free from wrath.*

This year, on the laſt day of *July*, it pleaſed God that by Thunder and Lightning one *John Philips* of *Marſhfield*, in the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*, was ſuddenly ſlain.

Alſo in the moneth of *Auguſt* it pleaſed God to take away by death Mr. *VVilliam Paddy*, who was a precious Servant of Chriſt, endued with a meek and quiet Spirit, of a courteous behaviour to all men, and was very careful to nouriſh an intimate Communion with God: He was inſtrumental in his place for common good both in the Church, (being ſometimes

by Office a Deacon of the Church of Chriſt at *Plimouth*) and in other reſpects very officious as occaſion did require. He having a great Temporal Eſtate, was occaſioned thereby to have abundance of buſineſs upon him: but when he was to put off this his earthly Tabernacle, he laid aſide all his earthly Incumbrances and Occaſions, even as one would have taken off a garment, and laid it down; and without any trouble of Spirit (on that behalf) prepared himſelf for his Journey to the Everlaſting Manſions, prepared for him by his Lord and Maſter in the higheſt Heavens, whereof he was well aſſured; as to the like effect he ſpake ſome words to Mr. *Norton*, near unto the period of his life: and ſo falling aſleep in the Lord, he was buried at *Boſton* with honour and great lamentation, in the year and moneth above-mentioned.

One who was well acquainted with his Worth and gracious Endowments, preſented this following as a Teſtimoniall of his good reſpects of him.

W *eep not dear* Wife, Childeren, *nor dear* Friends,
I *live a life of Joyes that never ends.*
L *ove God, and fear him to end of your dayes:*
L *ive unto him, but die to ſin alwayes.*
I *n heavenly place of Bliſs my Soul doth reſt*
A *mong the Saints and Angels I am bleſt;*
M *uch better here, then in the world at beſt.*

P *raiſing my God is now my great imploy,*
A *bove ſuch troublts as did me annoy.*
D *id but my friends know what I here poſſeſs,*
D *oubtleſs it would cauſe them to mourn the leſs:*
Y *our Souls with mine ere long ſhall meet in bliſs.*

1659.

1659.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas Willet*,
Major *Joſias Winſlow*,
Lieut. *Thomas Southworth*,
Mr. *William Bradford*, &
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley*,
} were Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

Having noted before, That in the Year 1657. there arrived in the Colony of *New-Plimouth* many of that pernicious Sect called *Quakers*, the Reader may take notice, That by this time, and for ſome years after, *New-England* (in divers parts of it) abounded with them, and they ſowed their corrupt and damnable Doctrines, both by word and writings, almoſt in every Town of each Juriſdiction; ſome whereof were, *That all men ought to attend to the Light within them to be the Rule of their Lives and Actions*; and, *That the holy Scriptures were not for the inlightning of man, nor a ſetled and permanent Rule of life.* They denied the Manhood of the Lord Jeſus Chriſt, and affirmed, *That as Man he is not in Heaven.* They denied the Reſurrection from the dead. They affirmed, *That an abſolute Perfection in Holineſs or Grace is attainable in this life.* They placed their Juſtification upon their Patience and Suffering for their Opinions, and on their righteous life, and retired demurity, and affected ſingularity both in word and geſture.

As to Civil account, they allowed not nor practiſed any civil reſpect to man, though ſuperiours, either in Magiſtratical conſideration, or as Maſters, or Parents, or the Ancient, neither by word nor geſture. They deny alſo the uſe of Oathes for

the deciding of Civil Controverſies; with other abominable Opinions, Dreams, and Conceits, which ſome of them have expreſſed, tending to groſs Blaſphemy and Atheiſm.

This efficacy of Deluſion became very prevalent with many, ſo as the number of them increaſed, to the great endangering of the ſubverſion of the whole, both of Church and Commonwealth, notwithſtanding the endeavours of thoſe in Authority to ſuppreſs the ſame, had not the Lord declared againſt them, by blaſting their Enterprizes & Contrivements, ſo as they have of late withered away in a great meaſure; ſundry of their Teachers and Leaders which have cauſed them to erre, are departed the Country, and we truſt the Lord will make the folly of the remainder manifeſt to all men more and more. Errour is not long-lived; the day will declare it. Let our deliverance from ſo eminent a danger, be received amongſt the principal of the Lords gracious Providences, and merciful loving kindneſſes towards *New-England*, for the which let preſent and future generations celebrate his Praiſes.

This year that Learned and godly Servant of God, Mr. *Henry Dunſter*, fell aſleep in the Lord. He was ſometimes Preſident of *Harvard* Colledge at *Cambridge* in *New-England*, in which he approved himſelf to the ſatisfaction of ſuch as were in thoſe Affairs concerned. Afterwards he came into the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*, and lived awhile in the Town of *Scituate*, and was uſeful in helping to oppoſe the abominable Opinions of the *Quakers* fore-mentioned, and in the defending of the Truth againſt them. He deceaſing in the ſaid Town of *Scituate*, his Body was embalmed, and removed unto *Cambridge* aforeſaid, and there honourably buried.

1660.

1660.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth:*

Mr. *William Collier,*
Mr. *John Alden,*
Captain *Thomas Willet,*
Major *Joſias Winſlow,*
Capt. *Tho: Southworth,*
Capt. *VVilliam Bradford,* &
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley,*
} were Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

This year *James Pierce,* a young man that belonged to *Boſton* coming on Fiſhing, and upon occaſion putting into *Plimouth* Harbour, it pleaſed God that a ſtorm of Thunder and Lightning aroſe, and by a blow thereof he was ſlain of a ſudden, being much ſcorched and burnt thereby, although his Clothes were made faſt and cloſe about him: ſo ſtrange was this great work to the wonderment of all that beheld it.

1661.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth:*

Mr. *William Collier,*
Mr. *John Alden,*
Captain *Thomas VVillet,*
Major *Joſias VVinſlow,*
Capt. *Thomas Southworth,*
Capt. *VVilliam Bradford,* &
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley,*
} Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

1662.

1662.

MR. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas Willet*,
Major *Joſias Winſlow*,
Capt. *Thomas Southworth*,
Capt. *William Bradford*, &
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley*,
} were Choſen his Aſſiſtants in Government.

This Year upon occaſion of ſome ſuſpition of ſome plot intended by the *Indians* againſt the *Engliſh*; *Philip* the Sachem of *Pocanaket*, otherwiſe called *Metacom*, made his appearance at the Court held at *Plimouth*, *Auguſt* 6. did earneſtly deſire the continuance of that amity and friendſhip that hath formerly been between the Governour of *Plimouth* and his deceaſed Father and Brother: and to that end the ſaid *Philip* doth for himſelf and his ſucceſſors deſire, that they might for ever remain ſubject to the King of *England*, his heirs and ſucceſſors; and doth faithfully promiſe and engage, that he and his, will truely and exactly obſerve and keep inviolable, ſuch conditions as formerly have been by his Predeceſſors made; and particularly, that he will not at any time, needleſly or unjuſtly, provoke or raiſe War with any of the *Natives*; nor at any time give, ſell, or any way diſpoſe of any Lands (to him or them appertaining) to any ſtrangers, or to any without our privity or appointment; but will in all things endeavour to carry peaceably, and inoffenſively towards the *Engliſh*.

And the ſaid Court did then alſo expreſs their willingneſs to continue with him and his, the aboveſaid friendſhip, and do on their part promiſe, that they will afford them ſuch friendly aſ-

ſiſtance

ſiſtance by Advice and otherwiſe, as they juſtly may: And we will require our *Engliſh* at all times to carry friendly towards them. In witneſs whereof the ſaid *Philip* the Sachem hath ſet to his Hand, as alſo his Uncle, and Witneſſed unto by ſundry other of his chief men.

Witneſs, John Sauſamen.

The mark ⊏ *of* Francis *the Sachem of* Nauſet.

The mark ⊆ *of* Philip *alias* Metacom.

This year, on the 26 of *January*, at the ſhutting in of the Evening, there was a very great Earthquake in *New-England*, and the ſame night another, although ſomething leſs then the former.

And again, on the 28 of the ſame moneth there was another about Nine of the clock in the morning.

Foraſmuch as I have had ſpecial occaſion ſeveral times in this Hiſtory to mention divers Earthquakes that have been in *New-England*, they being great and terrible works of God, and are uſually ominous to ſome; ſtrokes and viſitations of his hand unto places and peoples where they are; and ſometimes the Lord in the very acting of his power in them, hath declared his ſeverity to the children of men, to their great overthrow and confuſion:

I thought it neceſſary, before I paſs on, a little to point at ſome few particulars, to work and induce us to a profitable remembrance of them; it being very conſiderable that is ſaid by a uſeful Author, in taking notice of the Wiſdome of God, in preparing the Earth to be a fit Habitation for man to dwell in, addeth withall, *That as if man were not alwayes worthy to tread upon ſo ſolid a foundation, we ſee it oft-times quake and ſhake, and rock and rend it ſelf, as if it ſhewed that he which made it threatned by this trembling the Impiety of the world, and the ruine of thoſe that dwell on the Earth.*

In order unto that which I have nominated in this behalf, and more principally intend, let us take notice, That Writers have rendred the cauſe of Earthquakes to be, *That when it*

happeneth that Air and windy Spirits and Exhalations are ſhut up in the Caverns of the Earth, or have ſuch paſſage as is too narrow for them, they then ſtriving to break their priſons, ſhake the Earth, and make it tremble. They ſpeak likewiſe of the ſeveral kindes of them: as

Firſt, When the whole force of the Wind driveth to one place, there being no contrary motion to let or hinder it; many Hills and Buildings have been ruſhed down by this kinde of Earthquake, eſpecially when the Wind cauſing it was ſtrong: for if it be a feeble Wind, it onely looſeneth or unfaſteneth Foundations; if leſs feeble, then without further harm the Earth onely ſhakes, like one ſick of an Ague.

Secondly, The ſecond kinde is a ſwelling of the Earth; the which, when the Wind is broken out of its priſon, the Earth returns to its place again.

Thirdly, A third kinde is, A gaping, rending, or cleaving of the Earth one part from another, ſo that ſometimes whole Towns, Cities, Rocks, Hills, Rivers, and ſome parts of the Sea hath been ſwallowed up, and never ſeen more.

Fourthly, A fourth kinde is, Shaking that cauſeth ſinking, and is farre different from the former; for now the Earth ſplitteth not, but ſinketh: this being in ſuch places where though the ſurface of the ground be ſolid, yet it hath but a ſalt foundation, which being moiſtened by water driven through it by the force of the ſhaking Exhalation, is turned into water alſo.

Thus was the Atlantick Ocean cauſed to be a Sea, as Plato *affirmeth, who lived 366 years before Chriſt was born.*

Fifthly, A fifth kinde of Earthquake is contrary to the former; for as before the ground ſinks down, ſo now it is caſt up, like as in the ſecond kinde already mentioned: onely this is the difference, that now it returneth not to its place again, but remains a great Mountain. And note, that if ſuch a Riſing be in the Sea, it not onely cauſeth overflowings, but produceth likewiſe many Iſlands, ſuch as were never ſeen before.

Theſe particulars are treated of at large by approved Authors, and here onely hinted, to the intent that we may take notice of the ſpecial Providence of God to *New-England* in this

this behalf, that we have not as yet felt the miſery of the worſt of the kindes of Earthquakes forenamed, nor ſwallowed up in them, but thoſe we have been ſenſible of have been rather gentle Warnings unto us, to ſhake us out of our earthly-mindedneſs, ſpiritual ſecurity, and other ſins, leſt the Lord do come againſt us with Judgements of this kinde in the foreſt and worſt ſort of them, or otherwiſe by removing the preſent bleſſing of godly Government from us.

Notwithſtanding that which hath been ſaid, the Efficient Cauſe is Supernatural, as either principally *God*, or inſtrumentally the *Angels*, although naturally the Wind ſhut up within the Pores and Bowels of the Earth, as is before-noted.

If the Effects of them uſually are ſuch, as by them is ſometimes a diſcovery of the Channels of Water, and Foundations of the World, the Removing of Mountains from one place to another, the Cleaving of Rocks, and opening of Graves and of Gates, yea the throwing down of many famous Buildings and Cities, and ſome ſwallowed up, and many thouſands of people deſtroyed thereby; the turning of plain Land into Mountains; the throwing down of Mountains, and raiſing up of Iſlands in the Sea, the breaking out of Rivers where there were none before; the diſcovery of burning Mountains where there were none ſeen before; Famine and Peſtilence: (of which particulars divers inſtances might be produced out of the Sacred Scriptures, and ſeveral other Authors;) Ought we not then to fear and tremble before ſo great a God, who (as one ſaith) *by his Handmaid Nature doth ſo terribly ſhake the Earth, as no Land can be ſure, no place ſo ſtrong that can defend us?* Nay, the more ſtrong, the more dangerous; for, the higher, the greater the fall. Let us therefore ſay with the Wiſe-man, *I know that whatſoever God doth, ſhall ſtand for ever; nothing can be put to it, nor any thing taken from it: and God doth it that men ſhould fear before him.*

Exod. 19. 18. Pſal. 29. 6. & 104. 32. Matth. 28. 2. Pſal. 18. 15. Zech. 14. 4. Rev. 6. 12, 14. Mat. 27. 51. Acts 16. 25.

Eccleſ. 3. 14.

This Year Mr. *John Brown* ended this life; in his younger Years travelling into the low Countries, he came acquainted with, and took good liking to the Reverend Paſtor of the

Church of Christ at *Leyden* as also to sundry of the Brethren of that Church; which ancient amity induced him (upon his coming over to *New England*) to seat himself in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*, in which he was chosen a Magistrate: in which place he served God and the Country several Years; he was well accomplished with abilities, to both civil and religious concernments, and attained through Gods grace unto a comfortable perswasion of the love and favour of God to him; he falling sick of a Feaver, with much serenity and spiritual comfort, fell asleep in the Lord, and was honourably buried at *Wannamoiset* near *Rehoboth*, in the spring of the Year abovesaid.

1663.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Chosen Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Capt. *Thomas Willet*,
Major *Josias Winslow*,
Capt. *Thomas Southworth*,
Capt. *William Bradford*
Mr. *Thomas Hinckley*,
} were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.

This year Mr. *Samuel Newman*, Teacher of the Church of Christ at *Rehoboth*, changed this life for a better. He was sometimes Preacher of Gods Word at *Weymouth* in the Jurisdiction of the *Massachusets*, and from thence removed to *Rehoboth*, where he continued in the Work of the Ministry untill the end of his dayes. He was a lively dispenser of the Word of God, and of a pious life, very hospitable, and at the close of his life very full of joy and comfort; and with chearfulness of

of ſpirit reſigned himſelf up to the Lord, and his Spirit into arms of his bleſſed Redeemer, deſiring that the holy Angels might do their office in tranſporting his Soul into everlaſting bliſs and happineſs. He fell aſleep in the Lord on the the fifth of *July* 1663.

This year alſo it pleaſed God to put a ſpeedy period to the life of Mr. *John Norton*, who was *a burning and a ſhining Light*; and although the Church of *Boſton* in a more ſpecial manner felt the ſmart of this ſudden blow, yet it reflected upon the whole Land. He was ſingularly endowed with the Tongue of the Learned, inabled to ſpeak a word in due ſeaſon, not onely to the wearied Soul, but alſo a word of Counſel to a people in neceſſity thereof, being not onely a wiſe Steward of the things of Jeſus Chriſt, but alſo a wiſe Stateſman; ſo that the whole Land ſuſtained a great loſs of him. At his firſt coming over into *New-England*, he arrived at *Plimouth*, where he abode the beſt part of one Winter, and Preached the Goſpel of the Kingdome unto them; and ever after to his dying day retained a good affection unto them: From thence he went to *Boſton*, and from thence to *Ipſwich* in *New-England*, where he was choſen the Teacher of their Church; and after the death of worthy Mr. *Cotton* he was ſollicited, and at length obtained to return to *Boſton*, and there ſerved in that Office untill his death. He was choſen by the Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſets*, together with the much honoured Mr. *Simon Bradſtreet*, to go over into *England* as Agents in the behalf of that Juriſdiction, unto His Majeſty and the Privy-Council, upon Buſineſs of greateſt Truſt and Concernment; and ſoon after his Return, it pleaſed God ſuddenly and unexpectedly to take him away by death on the fifth day of *April*, 1663. His Body was honourably buried at *Boſton*. On whoſe much lamented death take this following *Elegie*.

An *Elegie* on the Death of that Eminent Minister of the Gospel, Mr. *John Norton*, the Reverend Teacher of the Church of Christ at *Boston*, who exchanged this life for a better *April* 5. 1663.

Ask not the reason why Tears are our meat,
And none but Mourners seen in ev'ry street?
Our Crown (*alas*) is faln from our head;
We finde it off: Woe to us, *NORTON's dead!*

Our breach is like the Sea, no healing's known:
To comfort Sions *daughter is there none?*
Oh teach your daughters Wailing every one,
Their Neighbours deepest Lamentation!

Oh that mine eyes a Fountain were of Tears!
I'd day and night in Mourning spend my years.
My Father! Father! Israels Chariots thou
And Horsemen wer't! *Sons of the Prophets now*

Weep, since your Master from your head is taken:
This Father of the Muses *hath forsaken*
His Study here, not liking our dark Roome,
Doth chuse those Mansions in his Fathers Home.

The Schoolmen's Doctors, *whomsoe're they call*
Subtile, Seraphick, *or* Angelicall:
Dull Souls! their Tapers burnt exceeding dim;
They might to School again to learn of him.

Lombard *must out of date: We now profess*
Norton *the* Master of the Sentences.
Scotus, *a Dunce to him: Should We compare*
Aquinas *here, none to be named are.*

Of a more heavenly strain his Notions were,
More pure, sublime, Scholastical and cleare:
More like the Apostles Paul *and* John *I wist,*
Was this our Orthodox Evangelist.

And

And though an Exile from his Native Land,
As John *in* Patmos *was*; *yet here the hand*
Of Chriſt leads forth more clearly to eſpy
The New-Jeruſalem *in her bravery.*

Who more Acute in Judgement *was then he?*
More famous too for Heavenly Policie?
He was a wiſe and faithful Counſellor,
One of a thouſand, an Interpreter.

Mighty in Word *and* Prayer, *who could have*
Whate're almoſt from Heaven he did crave:
On him, *with things without* (*which I'le not name*)
The care of all the Churches daily came.

He car'd thus naturally: Oh hear that Rod
Which us bereav'd of ſuch a Man of God!
Zealous for Order; *very Criticall*
For what was truely Congregationall.

A Pillar *of our* Church *and* State *was he*;
But now No more, no more his face we ſee!
Who thought more fit of all his Tribe *to ſtand*
Before our King, for favour for our Land
Lately? but now tranſlated is to Reſt
This Agent *of* New-Englands *Intereſt.*

When laſt he Preach'd, he us the Patern *gave*
Of all that Worſhip *Chriſt in's Church would have:*
God then him up into the Mount *did call,*
To have the Viſion Beatificall.

As Thomas *to the Twelve ſaid* [Come, let's go
And die with him] *I'd almoſt ſaid ſo too:*
I'le yet awhile in Tears ſowe, *that I may*
With him in joyful Reapings *live for ay.*

A Tomb

A Tomb now holds his Souls beloved Shrine,
*Of th'*Holy Ghoſt a Temple *moſt divine.*
And well New-Englands Heart may rent *at this!*
Wonder not, Reader, *I ſo greatly miſs*
Fit words, his Worth, *our* loſs *and* grief *to fame,*
When as no Epitaph *can declare the ſame.*

T. S.

Not long after, *viz.* in the moneth of *July*, followed the death of that Eminent Servant of God, Mr. *Samuel Stone*, who was another Star of the *firſt Magnitude* in the Firmament of *New-England.* He was a learned, ſolid, and judicious Divine, equally able for the Confirmation of the Truth, and Confutation of Errours. His Miniſtry was with much Conviction and Demonſtration, and when he ſet himſelf to Application, very Powerful. He was Teacher to the Church of *Hartford* fourteen years together with Mr. *Hooker*, and ſixteen years after him, Thirty years in all: He died on the 20*th* of *July*, and was honourably buried at *Hartford.*

A *Threnodia* upon our Churches ſecond dark Eclipſe, happening *July* 20. 1663. by Deaths Interpoſition between us and that Great Light and Divine Plant, Mr. *Samuel Stone*, late of *Hartford* in *New-England.*

Laſt Spring this Summer may be Autumn *ſtyl'd,*
Sad withering Fall *our Beauties which deſpoyl'd:*
Two choiceſt Plants, *our* Norton *and our* Stone,
Your Juſts *threw down; remov'd, away are gone.*
One Year brought Stone *and* Norton *to their Mother*
In one Year April July *them did ſmother.*
Dame Cambridge *Mother to this darling Son;*
Emmanuel, Northampt' *that heard this one,*

Eſſex,

Eſſex, *our* Bay, Hartford, *in Sable clad,*
Come bear your parts in this Threnodia *ſad.*
In loſing One, *Church* many loſt: *O then*
Many *for* One *come be ſad ſinging men.*
May Nature, Grace *and* Art *be found in* one
So high, as to be found in few *or* none?
In him theſe Three *with full-fraught hand conteſted*
With which by each he ſhould be moſt inveſted.
The Largeſs *of the* Three *it was ſo great*
On him, the Stone *was held a* Light compleat:
A Stone *more then the* Eben-ezer *fam'd*;
Stone *ſplendent Diamond, right* Orient *nam'd*;
A Cordiall Stone, *that often cheared hearts*
With pleaſant Wit, with Goſpel rich imparts;
Whet-Stone, *that Edg'ſi'd th' obtuſeſt Minde*;
Load-Stone, *that drew the Iron Heart unkinde*;
A Ponderous Stone, *that would the Bottom ſound*
Of Scripture-depths, and bring out Arcan's *found*;
A Stone *for Kingly* David's *uſe ſo fit,*
As would not fail Goliah's *Front to hit*;
A Stone *an* Antidote, *that brake the courſe*
Of Gangrene Errour by Convincing force;
A Stone Acute, *fit to divide and ſquare*;
A Squared Stone, *became Chriſt's Building rare*;
A Peter's Living lively Stone, (*ſo Reared*)
As 'live, *was* Hartfords *life*; dead, *death is feared.*
In Hartford *old*, Stone *firſt drew Infant-breath*;
In New *reſſus'd his laſt: O there beneath*
His Carpe are laid, near to his darling Brother, *Mr.* Hooker.
Of whom dead oft he ſigh'd, Not ſuch another.
Heaven is the more deſireable (*ſaid he*)
For *Hooker, Shepard,* and *Haynes* Company.

E. B.

1664.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth:*

Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Captain *Thomas Willet*,
Major *Joſias Winſlow*,
Capt. *Thos Southworth*,
Capt. *William Bradford*, &
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley*,
} were Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

This year a *Blazing-Star* or *Comet* appeared in *New-England*, in the Ninth, Tenth, Eleventh, and the beginning of the Twelfth Moneth: Concerning which, it hath been obſerved, That ſuch was its motion, that in all likelihood it was viſible to all the Inhabitants of the Earth; and that alſo in its motion the *Blaze* of it did turn to all the quarters of the World; and that by its turning according to the ſeveral Aſpects it had to the Sun, it was no fiery Meteor cauſed by Exhalation, but that it was ſent immediately by God to awake the ſecure World.

I willingly cloſe with that which Mr. *Samuel Danforth* hath Religiouſly obſerved, as to the *Theological Application* of this ſtrange and notable Appearance in the Heavens, *That indeed by the Teſtimony of the Sacred Scriptures, and the common Hiſtories of former Ages*, Comets *do uſually precede, and portend great Calamities, and notable Changes.*

To adde a few more Inſtances to thoſe the ſaid Author hath well obſerved.

When the Emperour *Jovian* attained to the Empire, (ſucceeding the Apoſtata *Julian*, under whom the Church ſuffered much Perſecution) and that under him both Church and Commonwealth were like to have had a flouriſhing time, had he

he not been taken away by ſudden death; Then alſo appeared a *Comet*, ſhewing that further trouble was yet to be expected to the Church. *Socrates, lib. 4. Cap. 22.*

Again, other Authors make mention of a ſtrange *Comet* that was ſeen in the year of Chriſt 410, being like a Two-edged Sword, which portended many Miſchiefs and Calamities that happened both in the Eaſt and Weſt, and ſuch great ſlaughters of men were about thoſe dayes, as no Age ever affoorded the like: All *Europe* was in a manner undone; no ſmall part of *Aſia* was affrighted; and *Africa* alſo was not void of thoſe Evils, as War, Famine, Drought and Peſtilence: all of them ſtrove as it were to trouble the whole World.

Alſo in the Years 1400, 1401, 1402, 1403, *Comets* appeared, and great Calamities followed; ſundry unheard-of Diſeaſes were felt, Rivers dried up, and Plagues were increaſed; *Tamerlain*, King of the *Scythians* and *Parthians*, with an innumerable Hoſt invaded *Aſia*, calling himſelf *The Wrath of God, and Deſolation of the Earth.* Reade *Carion, lib. 5. pag 854.*

Alſo in the Year 1529 appeared four *Comets*; and in the Years 1530, 1532, and 1533, were ſeen in each year one.

Lanquet ſaith, That there were three within the ſpace of two years, upon which theſe and the like Calamities followed; *viz.* A great Sweating Sickneſs in *England*, which took away great multitudes of people; The *Turk* in the quarrel of *John Vnavoyda*, who laid Claim to the Crown of *Hungaria*, entred the ſaid Kingdome with Two hundred and fifty thouſand fighting Souldiers, committing againſt the Inhabitants thereof moſt harſh and unſpeakable Murthers, Rapes, Villanies and Cruelties.

Great Famine and Dearth in *Venice*, and the Countries thereabouts, which ſwept away many; The Sweating Sickneſs in *Brabant*, and in a great part of *Germany*.

Great Wars likewiſe about the Dukedome of *Millain*, between the Emperour *Charles* the Fifth, and *Francis* the *French* King.

About that time alſo all *Luſitania* or *Portugal* was ſtruck

with an Earthquake, insomuch that at *Ulisippo*, or *Lisbon*, above a Thousand Houses were thrown down, and Sixty more so shaken that they were ready to fall: with many other Evils that befell those parts about that time.

And to observe what hath fallen out since this last *Comet* appeared, will not be unuseful, either in *Europe*, or in *America*.

Since the writing hereof there have been sad engagements betwixt the two Nations, and much Blood spilt.

In *Europe*, the great Contest between our own Nation and the *Dutch*, which hath threatned bloody War; and what will be in the conclusion, is known onely to God: Besides other Contests between the *Dutch* and some other of their Neighbours; as also the Pestilence very hot both in *England* and *Holland*.

In *America*, the late and sad blow that our Countrymen at the Isle *Christophers* received from the *French*. And as to our selves in *New-England*, although through the mercy of our good God there is no breaking in, nor going out into Captivity, nor complaining in our streets; yet we have been threatned with Invasion by Forreign Force, and sometimes in expectation thereof; as also we are not to slight the hand of God in his late sore Strokes in taking away so many by Thunder and Lightning, to the great amazement and terrour of many: as also Gods continued strokes in Drought, Blasting, and Mildew, with which much of the Fruits of the Earth have been destroyed. All which considered, ought to induce us to search and try our wayes, and to enter into a strict and serious examination of our hearts and lives, and having found out what those sins are that are most provoking to the Majesty of Heaven, we may reform them, whether in Church, in State, in Family, or in Persons; that so he may *not stir up all his* Psal. 78 38. *wrath, but yet may delight over us to do us good, from the beginning of the year to the end thereof.*

This year it pleased God to smite the Fruits of the Earth, *viz.* the Wheat in special, with Blasting and Mildew, whereby much of it was utterly spoiled, and became profitable for nothing, and much of it worth little, being light and empty. This was looked at by the judicious and conscientious of the Land,

Land, as a ſpeaking Providence againſt the *Unthankfulneſs* of many for ſo great a mercy, and their *Murmuring* expreſſed in their words, by ſlighting and undervaluing terms of it: as alſo againſt Voluptuouſneſs, and abuſe of the good Creatures of God by Licentiouſneſs in Drinking, and Faſhions in Apparel; for the obtaining whereof, a great part of this principal Grain was oftentimes unneceſſarily expended. This ſo ſad a Diſpenſation, with other particulars, occaſioned the obſervation of ſome dayes in a way of Humiliation before the Lord, ſomewhat more frequently then ordinary. Let it alſo be obſerved, That yet *in judgement he remembred mercy*, by affording a plentiful Harveſt of other ſorts of Grain, ſo as the Country ſuffered not in reſpect of the want of Bread this year, but had plenty thereof.

This year alſo His Majeſties Commiſſioners, *viz.* Colonel *Richard Nicolls*, Sir *Robert Carre* Knight, *George Cartwright* Eſq; and *Samuel Maverick* Eſq; Arrived at *Boſton* in *New-England* in the moneth of *July:* The tenour of whoſe Commiſſion was in ſpecial, *To reduce the* Dutch *at the* Manhato's *to His Majeſties Obedience*; which in ſome ſhort time was accompliſhed, and the Place and Juriſdiction thereof ſurrendred up unto His Majeſties ſaid Commiſſioners, who ſtyled it by the Name of *New-York*, and placed a Government over it of His Majeſties Subjects, the aforeſaid honourable Colonel *Richard Nicolls* being Governour in chief there. And whereas they were likewiſe Commiſſionated *To hear and determine ſuch Differences as might be amongſt the Colonies, in reſpect unto the Bounds of their Juriſdictions*; Some ſuch Differences were by them heard, and in ſpecial betwixt *Plimouth* and *Road-Iſland*, and ſuch Settlement therein concluded as they were capacitated unto. As alſo ſundry Propoſitions were by them made to ſeveral of the reſpective Juriſdictions, which together with the Agitations concerning them, and the Anſwers unto them, are elſewhere extant. They likewiſe preſented the honoured Governour of the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth* (as to that Colony) with a gracious Letter from His Majeſty: The Contents whereof are as followeth.

To Our Truſty and Well beloved, Our Governour and Council of New-Plimouth, *greet.*

CHARLES REX.

TRuſty and well-beloved, We greet you well. We need not inlarge upon Our Care of, and Affection to that Our Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, when We give you ſuch a Teſtimony & Manifeſtation of it, in the ſending of thoſe Gentlemen, perſons well known unto Us, and deſerving from us, Our truſty and well-beloved Colonel *Richard Nicolls*, Sir *Robert Carre* Knight, *George Cartwright* Eſq; and *Samuel Maverick* Eſq; our Commiſſioners to viſit you, and other our Plantations in thoſe parts of *New-England*, and to give us a full and particular Information and account of your preſent ſtate and condition, and how the ſame may be advanced and improved by any further Acts of Grace and Favour from us towards you; and that both you and all the world may know and take notice, That we take you into our immediate protection, and will no more ſuffer you to be oppreſſed or injured by any foreign Power, or ill Neighbours, then we would ſuffer our other Subjects that live upon the ſame Continent with us, to be ſo injured and oppreſſed. And as our Care and Protection will (we doubt not) be ſufficient with Gods bleſſing to defend you from foreign force; ſo our Care and Circumſpection is no leſs, that you may live in peace amongſt your ſelves, and with thoſe our other Subjects who have planted themſelves in your neighbour Colonies, with that Juſtice, Affection, and brotherly Love, which

which becomes Subjects born under the ſame Prince, and in the ſame Country, and of the ſame Faith and Hope in the Mercies of our Lord and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt. And to the end there may be no Contentions and Differences between you, in reſpect of the bounds and Juriſdiction of your ſeveral Colonies; the hearing and determining whereof we have referred to our Commiſſioners, as the Right appears by clear Evidence and Teſtimony before them, or that they can ſettle it by your mutual Conſent and Agreement; otherwiſe, in caſes of difficulty, they ſhall preſent the ſame to us, who will determine according to our own Wiſdome and Juſtice. The *Addreſs* you formerly made to us, gave us ſo good ſatisfaction of your Duty, Loyalty and Affection to us, that we have not the leaſt doubt that you will receive thoſe Commiſsioners in ſuch manner as becomes you, and as may manifeſt your reſpect and affection towards us, from whom they are ſent. They will let you know the reſolution we have to preſerve all your Liberties and Priviledges, both Eccleſiaſtical and Civil, without the leaſt violation; which we preſume will diſpoſe you to manifeſt by all wayes in your power, Loyalty and Affection to us, that all the world may know that you do look upon your ſelves as being as much our Subject, and living under the ſame obedience under us, as if you continued in your natural Country. And ſo We bid you farewell.

Given at Our Court at Whitehall, *April* 23. 1664.
in the Sixteenth Year of Our Reign.

By His Majeſties ſpecial Command,
HENRY BENET.

After

After the ſaid His Majeſties Commiſſioners had viſited ſeveral of the Juriſdictions of *New-England*, and were courteouſly entertained in every of them, the ſaid honourable Colonel *Richard Nicolls* is ſetled at *New-York* for the preſent, being Governour there, as is before-noted: *George Cartwright* Eſq; went for *England* in the latter end of the year with Mr. *Benjamin Gillam*, and was taken by the *Dutch*, and afterwards with ſome difficulty arrived in *England:* Sir *Robert Carre* is at the preſent at *Delaware*, and Mr. *Samuel Maverick* at *Boſton.*

The ſaid Sir Robert Carre *ſince that went for* England, *in the year 67.*

He arrived at Briſtol, *and died there* June 1. *the next day after he came aſhore. About that time it was thought by ſuch as were judicious, That through the Inſtigation of the ſaid* Maverick, *(whoſe ſpirit was full of Malignity againſt the Country our both Civil and Religious Liberties were much endangered; and the rather for that probably there would have been a Concurrence of divers Ill-affected in the Land, had not the Lord prevented.*

1665.

THis year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Elected Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth.*

Mr. *William Collier*,
Mr. *John Alden*,
Major *Joſias Winſlow*,
Capt. *Thomas Southworth*,
Capt. *William Bradford*,
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley*, &
Mr. *James Brown*,
} were Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

In the Spring of this Year, that honourable Gentleman Mr. *John Endicot*, Governour of the Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſets*, changed this life for a better. He was a very virtuous Gentleman, and was greatly honoured and loved of the moſt, as he well deſerved. He arrived at *Salem* in the year 1628, and

and had the chief Command of thoſe that at the firſt there ſeated, and bare a deep ſhare of the Difficulties of thoſe firſt beginnings, which were great, by reaſon eſpecially of the great Sickneſs and Mortality that was then amongſt them, as hath been before-noted: There he continued, untill the Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſets* ſaw reaſon to deſire his removal to *Boſton*, for the more convenient Adminiſtration of Juſtice, as Governour of the ſaid Juriſdiction, to which he was frequently Elected for many years together with little intermiſſion; and in which honourable Service he ſerved God and the Country, untill old Age, and the Infirmities thereof, coming upon him, he fell aſleep in the Lord, and was with great honour and ſolemnity Interred at *Boſton*.

This year it pleaſed God to cauſe a ſad diſpenſation of his hand to paſs before us, in reference to the ſudden death of Captain *Davenport*, who in the Moneth of *July* was ſlain as he lay on his Bed with a blow of Thunder and Lightning. He was a man of ſome Eminency, being betruſted with the Command of the Caſtle in the *Maſſachuſets*; at which ſaid Caſtle he was ſlain as aforeſaid: The more ought this ſo ſad ſtroke of God to be conſidered, and laid to heart, and improved for our humiliation, and the amendment of our lives before the great and terrible God, who ſo aloud ſpake unto us in this ſo ſad and awing a Providence.

This year it pleaſed the Lord again to ſtrike the Wheat of this Country in a more general way then the laſt year, with Blaſting and Mildew, whereby the greateſt part of it was ſpoiled, and the Plowmans hopes (in that reſpect) very much fruſtrated. Howbeit, the Lord ſtill mixed with this affliction very much mercy, in ſparing the other Grain, whereby the Country was in ſome good meaſure ſupplied.

1666.

THis Year Mr. *Thomas Prince* was Chosen Governour of the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *John Alden*,
Major *Josias Winslow*,
Capt. *Thomas Southworth*,
Capt. *William Bradford*
Mr. *Thomas Hinckley*,
Mr. *James Brown*, &
Lieut. *John Freeman*,
} were chosen to be his Assistants in Government.

This year it pleased God to go on in a manifestation of his displeasure against *New-England*, in a very remarkable manner, by striking dead in a moment by a blow of Thunder, three persons in the Town of *Marshfield* in the Jurisdiction of *New-Plimouth*, in the moneth of *June*, *viz.* one named *William Shirtliff*, and a Woman and a Youth; which sad Dispensation of Gods hand, being considered with some Circumstances, gave cause to the beholders to be much astonished: the said *Shirtliff* having his Wife by the hand, and sitting by her to chear her, in respect that the said storm was so fierce, he was slain, and she preserved, though in some measure scorched with the Lightning; yea, he had one of his Children in his arms, and himself slain, and the Childe preserved. We have likewise received intelligence of four more that about that time were slain by Thunder and Lightning about *Piscataqua*, and divers more hurt. At the time of this storm of Thunder and Lightning, in the which those of *Marshfield* died, there arose likewise a very great Whirlwind, that where it came it tore up Trees by the Roots, though through mercy it did little other hurt.

It was a great while, and many years spent since the *English* came

came into theſe parts, before any very conſiderable hurt was done by Thunder and Lightning to either man, or beaſt appertaining to them, although ſometimes very fierce ſtorms of that kinde, as frequently as in theſe times: but now how doth the Lord go on gradually in this, as in other Judgements here in *New-England?* firſt by ſtriking Cattel, and then one perſon at a time, and this year divers, to the number of ſeven, beſides ſome Cattel alſo.

Thus *God thundereth marvellouſly with his voice, he worketh great things which we know not: He can ſend the Lightnings that they may walk, and ſay, Lo here we are. Hath any an arm like God? or can any thunder with a voice like him?* By this his terrible Voice *he breaketh the Cedars, and divideth the flames of fire*; which he commiſſionates to do his pleaſure, ſometimes not onely ſtriking Cedars, but great Oaks in a wonderful manner, ſometimes Beaſts, ſometimes Men and Women. If *Gods Judgements have* thus *been abroad in the Earth, how ought the Inhabitants* (of *New-England*) *to learn righteouſneſs?* How eaſily can the Lord *ſtain the pride of our glory* with a ſtroke of his hand? Let not the familiarneſs or frequency of ſuch Providences, cauſe them to be neglected by us, to improve them as God would have us, *to fear before him*, and to turn from ſuch iniquities eſpecially as are moſt diſpleaſing unto him, and to hold our lives in our hands, and to be in a readineſs for his pleaſure, leſt *knowing not our time, as the fiſhes that are taken in an evil net, and as the birds that are caught in the ſnare*, ſo we ſhall be ſnared in an evil time, when it falleth ſuddenly upon us.

Job 37. 5. & 38. 35. & 40. 8. Pſal. 29 5,7. Iſaiah 26. 9. Eccleſ. 8 13. Eccleſ. 9. 12.

This year the Lord threatned the Country with that infectious and contagious Diſeaſe of the *Small Pox*, which began at *Boſton*, whereof ſome few died: but through his great mercy it is ſtayed, and none of late have died thereof.

This year the Lord likewiſe threatned, and in ſome meaſure executed his diſpleaſure upon the Country by Drought; but through his mercy hath of late ſent plenty of Rain, for the recovering of the fruits of the earth. Although it is to be

observed, That ſoon after a day of Humiliation was obſerved by ſome Congregations, for the bleſſing of Rain in the Drought above-mentioned, that ſad ſtroke by the Thunder and Lightning at *Marſhfield* fell out: ſo that we may ſay with the Pſalmiſt unto the Lord, *By terrible things in Righteouſneſs thou haſt anſwered us, O God of our Salvation.*

Alſo this year there hath been ſome ground of fear of Invaſion by Forreign Enemies; but hitherto the Lord hath kept us.

This year much of the Wheat is deſtroyed with Blaſting and Mildew, as alſo ſome other Grain by Worms, and the Drought aforementioned; but the Lord hath ſent much Rain for the recovery of the remainder, through his great mercy.

A ſpecial Manifeſtation of Gods goodneſs towards ſome poor Salvages in the Juriſdiction of New-Plimouth.

This year, about the middle of *July*, Mr. *Thomas Prince* Governour of the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*, Captain *Thomas Southworth*, Mr. *John Eliot* ſenior, Mr. *John Eliot* junior, Mr. *Samuel Arnold*, Mr. *John Holmes*, Mr. *William Brinſmead*, and Mr. *Thomas Cuſhman*, gave meeting to Mr. *Richard Bourn* of *Sandwich*, in reference to the taking notice of what proficiency the *Indians* under the Inſtruction of the ſaid Mr. *Bourn* have attained unto, in the knowledge of God in Chriſt, and their intereſt in him by Faith, and to make ſuch Profeſſions or Confeſſions as they ſhould openly make thereof, to the glory of God, and the ſatisfaction of the Saints, in order unto their joyning into Church-fellowſhip.

And the Lord was pleaſed to come in unto ſome of them, ſo as they gave good ſatisfaction unto the ſaid honoured and judicious perſons forenamed, then aſſembled in reference to the premiſes: So that it was concluded by them, That what had paſſed from the *Indians* in that behalf, ſhould be drawn up in writing, and Copies thereof exhibited to the Churches of the Juriſdiction of *Plimouth*, ſuch of them as are neighbouring near unto them; and if nothing ſhould be then objected, that then in due and convenient time they ſhould be permitted and encouraged to enter into Church-fellowſhip as aforeſaid.

Now although I doubt not but the Paſſages of theſe things will

will be in due time publiſhed by a better Pen; yet I have made bold here to inſert ſo much as I have been informed of them, in regard that they are the firſt-fruits of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*, that have come on to ſo good perfection in this kinde.

This year, in the moneth of *December*, it pleaſed God to take unto himſelf by death that worthy Servant of Chriſt Mr. *William Thompſon*, who was a lively diſpenſer of the Word of God, and very affectionate in the delivery thereof. It pleaſed God to bleſs his Labours to the Converſion of many Souls. He was ſometimes, together with Mr. *Knowles*, ſent unto *Virginia* by the Elders of the Churches of the *Maſſachuſets*, being requeſted by a Meſſage ſent by ſome of *Virginia* for ſome help in Preaching Gods Word amongſt them: The fruit and benefit of whoſe Labours therein, ſtill remaineth upon the Souls of ſome eminent in this Land. He was Elected and Ordained to be Paſtor of the Church of Chriſt at *Braintry* in *New-England*; in which Office he ſerved Chriſt many years, untill old Age coming upon him, and the prevailing of his *Melancholly diſtemper*, did in a manner wholly diſable him from that Service; and Satan taking advantage thereby, he was under ſad deſertions and trouble of Spirit: At which time the Reverend Elders, and others of the aforeſaid Juriſdiction of the *Maſſachuſets*, were very officious for his Recovery, and in ſenſe of his ſad condition offered up many Prayers to God for him, and in Gods good time they received a gracious anſwer; ſo as in his weakneſs and ſickneſs it pleaſed God to come in unto his Soul, and to remove the Cloud of darkneſs that was upon his Spirit, ſo that with much peace and comfort he fell aſleep in the Lord, and his Body was honourably buried at *Braintry*. *Mark the upright man, and behold the juſt; for the end of that man is peace.*

1667.

MR. *Thomas Prince* was Choſen Governour of the Juriſdiction of *New-Plimouth*:

Mr. *John Alden*,
Major *Joſias VVinſlow*,
Capt. *Thomas Southworth*,
Capt. *VVilliam Bradford*,
Mr. *Thomas Hinkley*,
Mr. *John Freeman*, &
Mr. *Nathaniel Bacon*,
} Choſen Aſſiſtants to him in Government.

This year on the laſt day of *November*, being the laſt day of the next week, there was heard ſeveral loud Noiſes or Reports, as if it had been Guns diſcharged in the Air, firſt one diſtinctly, and in a ſhort time as it had been a Volley of Shot diſcharged: It was eſpecially heard and obſerved at *Nantasket*, and related by ſundry of them of good Credit.

In the Spring following, in the beginning of *March*, there appeared a Sign in the Heavens in the form of a Spear, ſomething thicker in the middeſt then at either end, of a whitiſh bright colour; it was ſeen ſeveral nights together in the Weſt, about an hour within the night: it ſtood ſtooping, and the one end pointing to the ſetting of the Sun, and ſo ſetled downward by little and little, untill it quite vaniſhed, and deſcended beneath our Horizon. God awaken us, that we be not heedleſs ſpectators of his wonderful Works.

This year, on the ſeventh of *Auguſt*, it pleaſed the Lord to call home to himſelf the Reverend, Ancient, and godly Paſtor of the Church of *Boſton*, Mr. *John Wilſon*: He was a truely Reverend and holy Man of God; he came to *New-England* in the year 1630. He was inſtrumental in the firſt beginnings of the Church of *Boſton*, having been the Paſtor of it three years before

before Mr. *Cotton*, Twenty years with him, Ten years with Mr. *Norton*, and Four years after him; Thirty seven in all: And in all the Changes of Times that passed over him, he was full of Faith and Prayer, and eminent for Sincerity and Humility, (being ever low in his own eyes;) and for the grace of Love, he had *largeness of heart as the sand of the Sea*, to do good to all. He was very charitable, where there was any signs and hopes of good; and yet withall very zealous against known and manifest evils. He was Orthodox in his Judgement, and very holy in his Conversation: Very few that ever went out of the world, so generally beloved and reverenced as this good man. He was *a good man* indeed, *and full of the holy Ghost*; He lived to *a good old age*, *and was full of dayes*, and full of honour, being in the Seventy ninth year of his Age, when the Lord took him to himself. He was Interred with much Honour and Lamentation.

In the time of his languishing Sickness he was visited by the Elders round about, especially on the Sixteenth of *May*, the day after the Court of Election, when there being a general meeting of all the Elders of the Churches at his house, they requested Mr. *Wilson* (because they knew not whether ever they should have the like opportunity to hear him speak again, and having been from the first a Pillar amongst them, and of much Experience in his observation of the state of things) That he would solemnly declare to them, what he conceived to be those sins amongst us, which provoked the displeasure of God against the Country. He then told them, *That he had divers times, and long feared these sins following, as chief among others, which God was greatly provoked with*; viz.

1. Separation.
2. Anabaptism.
3. Corahism.

This latter he did explain thus; *viz. when people rise up, as* Corah, *against their Ministers or Elders, as if they took too much upon them, when indeed they do but Rule for Christ, and according to Christ*; *yet* (saith he) *it is nothing for a Brother*

to

to ſtand up, and oppoſe without Scripture or Reaſon, the Doctrine and word of the Elder, ſaying, [I am not ſatisfied] *&c. And hence, if he do not like the Adminiſtration, (be it Baptiſm, or the like) he will then turn his back upon God and his Ordinances, and go away,* &c. *And* (ſaith he) *for our neglect of baptizing the Children of the Church, thoſe that ſome call* Grandchildren, *I think God is provoked by it.*

4. *Another ſin I take to be, The making light of, and not ſubjecting to the Authority of* Synods, *without which the Churches cannot long ſubſiſt. And ſo for the Magiſtrates being* Gallio-*like, either not caring for theſe things, or elſe not uſing their Power and Authority for the maintenance of the Truth, and Goſpel, and Ordinances of our Lord and Saviour Jeſus Chriſt, and for the bearing thorough witneſs againſt the contrary: Should the Lord leave* THEM *hereunto, how miſerable a people ſhould we be!*

At night the Aſſembly being diſmiſſed with Prayer, Mr. *Wilſon* did (being deſired by them ſo to do) in a ſolemn manner bleſs the Elders, making a ſhort Prayer, ſaying, *I am not like long to be with you; the Lord pardon us, and heal us, and make us more Heavenly, and take us off from the world, and make us burning and ſhining Lights, by our heavenly Doctrine and Example. And I beſeech the Lord with all my heart to bleſs you, and to bleſs his Churches, and to bleſs all his People, and to bleſs all your Families, and to bleſs your Wives, and to bleſs all your Children, and your Childrens Children; and make us all more and more meet for our Inheritance, and bring us all to it in his good time,* &c. Theſe words, with ſome few other, he ſpake with great affection, and with tears: and all the Miniſters wept with him, and they took their leave of him, even as Children of their Father, who having bleſſed them was about to die.

Upon

Upon the Death of that Reverend, Aged, Ever-honoured, and gracious Servant of Christ, Mr. *John Wilson*, Pastor of a Church in *Boston*: Interred *August* 8. 1667.

AH! now there's none who does not know
That this day in our Israel
Is fall'n a great and good man too,
A Prince *I might have said as well!*

A man of Princely Power with God,
For Faith *and* Love *of Princely spirit*;
Our Israels Chariots, Horsemen *good*,
By Faith *and* Prayer, *though not by* Merit.

Renown'd for Practick Piety
In Englands *both, from* Youth *to* Age;
In Cambridge, Inns-Court, Sudbury,
And each place of his Pilgrimage.

As humble as a little Childe,
When yet in reall worth high-grown:
Himself a Nothing *still he styl'd,*
When God so much had for him done.

In Love *a None-such:* as the Sand
With largest heart *God did him fill*;
A bounteous Minde, *an open* Hand,
Affection *sweet, all sweetning still.*

Love *was his Life*; *he dy'd in* Love;
Love *doth embalm his Memory*;
Love *is his Bliss and Joy, above*
With God now who is Love *for ay.*

A com-

A comprehending Charity
To all, where ought appear'd of good,
And yet in Zeal *was none more high*
Againſt th'apparent Serpents Brood.

To Truth *he ever conſtant was,*
In Judgement *wondrous Orthodox;*
In Truth's Cauſe *never fearing face,*
As if he were another Knox.

The Prelates *and their* Impoſitions
Did never him Conformiſt *make;*
But to avoid thoſe Superſtitions,
Great Worldly Hopes *did he forſake.*

When in New-England *Errours winde*
From ſundry other Quarters blew,
No one could him Conforming finde,
Nought from the Line of Truth him drew.

Firm ſtood he 'gainſt the Familiſt,
And Antinomian *ſpirit ſtrong,*
He never dav'd the Separ'tiſt,
Nor yet the Anabaptiſts throng.

Neither the Tolerator's ſtrain,
Nor Quakers Spirit *could he brook;*
Nor bow'd to the Morellian Train,
Nor Childrens Right *did over-look.*

Nor did he ſlight Our Liberties
In Civil *and in* Church-concerns,
But precious were they in his eyes
Who ſtood among their fixed friends.

Grave Saint in England *twice did give*
This farewell word to him; While you
Shall in that place (*New-England*) live
No hurt ſhall happen thereunto.

Strange word, and ſtrangely verify'd!
He this day goes to's Grave in peace.
What Changes ſad ſhall us betide
Now he is gone, we cannot gueſs!

What Evil are we haſtening to!
Lord ſpare thy People, but awaken;
When ſuch away do from us go,
That yet we may not be forſaken!

He a firſt Corner-ſtone *was laid*
In poor New-England's Boſton's *Wall:*
Death pulls this out; the breach is wide:
Oh let it not now tumble all!

Hee's now at Reſt, *and reigns in* Bliſs;
In Conflicts *we are left behinde,*
In Fears *and* Straits; *How ſhall we miſs*
His Faith, Prayer, Zeal, *and* peaceful Minde.

Lord pour a double portion
Of his ſweet, gracious, pious Spirit
On poor Survivers! *let each one*
Somewhat thereof at leaſt inherit!

Gaius *our hoſt, ah now is gone!*
Can we e're look for ſuch another?
But yet there is a Manſion
Where we may all turn-in together.

No moving Inne, but Reſting-place,
Where his bleſt Soul is gathered;
Where good men going are apace
Into the Boſome of their Head.

Ay thither let us haſte away,
Sure Heaven will the ſweeter bee
(If there we ever come to ſtay)
For him, and other ſuch as hee!

J. M.

Upon the Death of that moſt Reverend Man of God, Mr. *John Wilſon*, Paſtor of the firſt Church in *Boſton*, in *New-England*; whoſe deceaſe was *Aug.* 7. 1667.

JOHN Wilſon
Anagr.
John WILSON.

Oh change it not! no ſweeter Name or Thing
Throughout the World within our ears ſhall ring.

WHoſo of Abr'am, Moſes, Samuel *reads,*
Or of Elijah, or Eliſha's *deeds,*
Would ſurely ſay their Spirit and Power was his,
And think there were a Metempſychoſis.
Yea, like John Baptiſt *in the Wilderneſs,*
So was our John *in* Patmos *here, no leſs.*
John *the* Divine, *reſembling therefore rather,*
And of New-Englands *Prophets was the Father.*

John

John *the Divine, whoſe Life a Revelation*
Of Faith, and Love, and Chriſt to admiration.
John *the Divine, whom* Jeſus lov'd *moſt dear,*
Sweetned with leaning on his Boſome here:
This is that John, *whoſe Death who doth not moan,*
Hath ſure no heart of fleſh, but one of ſtone.
He had the Countries Faith, *and* Love, *and* Zeal,
Even Grace enough for Church and Common-weal;
Whereby was propt up all the Fabrick ſtill,
That elſe had tumbled down our Sion Hill.
Of meerly Men deſerving glory more,
You'll finde nor Martyr, *nor a* Confeſſor.
Inſpir'd he was with the Prophetick Spirit
Of all the Prophets, which he did inherit.
'Twixt an Apoſtle *and* Evangeliſt,
His Order ſtandeth in the Heavenly Liſt.
If Paul *himſelf among us dead had been,*
More tears or ſorrow could not have been ſeen.
They wept not more for this, that they ſhould ſee
His face no more, *then now we Mourners bee.*
For Heavenly Poems, *moſt Angelicall,*
Compoſing Volumes with delight: were all
But gathered up in one, we ſhould eſpy
Enough to fill an Univerſity.
And were another Pſalm-book *made by thee*
[Mictam of John] *their Title it ſhould bee.*
As aged John *th'Apoſtle us'd to bleſs*
The People, which they judg'd their happineſs:
So we did count it worth our Pilgrimage
Unto him, for his Bleſſing in his Age:
Yet then, no Babe more longing for the Breaſt,
Then he to take within the Church his reſt,
To have the ſincere Milk of God's good Word,
Which to his Soul all comfort did afford:
Not Heat, nor Cold, nor Rain, nor Snow muſt bar;
But every where becomes an Auditor.

Who ever labour'd in the Miniſtry
More given, then he, to Hoſpitality?
To Strangers, Widows, Fatherleſs *and all*;
To Friends *and* Foes *he was moſt liberall.*
Of all his Prayers, Sermons, Travels, Pains,
He is aſcended Heaven to reap the gains.
Oh for a double portion of thy Spirit!
No richer Treaſure would we all inherit.

Maſtus apposuit, T. S.

1668.

THis Year it pleaſed God to viſit *New-England* with the manifeſtation of his diſpleaſure, by the death of three Eminent Inſtruments: The firſt whereof was that worthy Servant of Chriſt Mr. *Samuel Shepard*, Paſtor of the Church of Chriſt at *Rowley* in *New-England*, who deceaſed in the Spring of this year, in the midſt of his dayes, and in the beginning of his Work in the Miniſtry. The ſecond, that worthy Man of God Mr. *Henry Flint*, Teacher of the Church of Chriſt at *Braintry* in *New-England*, who ended his mortal life the 27 of *April* in this year; a man of known Piety, Gravity, and Integrity, and well accompliſhed with other Qualifications fit for the Work of the Miniſtry. The third and laſt, but not the leaſt, that Supereminent Miniſter of the Goſpel (rightly ſo called) Mr. *Jonathan Mitchel*, Paſtor of the Church of Chriſt at *Cambridge* in *New-England*, who laid down his Earthly Tabernacle on the Ninth of *July* in this year: Of whoſe rare Endowments, and the great Loſs the whole Land ſuſtained by his death, take this following brief Account.

Mr. *Jonathan Mitchell* was born at *Halifax* in *York-ſhire* in *England*, of pious and wealthy Parents, who coming over

to

to *New-England*, brought him over young; his Education in Learning was perfected at *Harvard* Colledge in *Cambridge*, where he attained to such a degree in knowledge, that he was soon called to be a Fellow of the Colledge, and within few years after his lustre did so shine, that the Church at *Hartford* upon *Conecticot* River made application to him in order to supply the place of that Eminent Servant of Christ Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, a little before deceased; but the Church at *Cambridge* (by the Advice of their Pastor Mr. *Thomas Shepard*, then living) not willing to part with so great a Treasure, became Competitor with *Hartford*, and gave him a Call to them. This loving Strife between the two Churches of *Hartford* and *Cambridge* about him, was in a short time decided by the awfull hand of God, in the death of that Eminent and Glorious Star, Mr. *Thomas Shepard*, Pastor at *Cambridge*, which place being wholly destitute, and *Hartford* being supplied with a Teacher, namely, that Worthy of the Lord, Mr. *Samuel Stone*, the Ballance was cast for *Cambridge*, and in the year 1650 he was Called and Ordained their Pastor. It was an eminent favour of God to that Church, to have their great Breach thus made up, with a man so much of the Spirit and Principles of their former Pastor, and so excellently qualified with respect to the Colledge: for, Reason and Prudence requireth, that the Minister of that place be more then ordinarily endowed with Learning, Gravity, Wisdome, Orthodoxness, Ability, sweet and excellent Gifts in Preaching, that so the Scholars which are devoted and set apart in order to be Preachers of the Gospel, might be seasoned with the Spirit of such an *Elijah*: In which regard, this holy Man of God was eminently furnished, and his Labours wonderfully blessed; for very many of the Scholars bred up in his time (as is observed) do savour of his Spirit, for grace and manner of Preaching, which was most attractive. He lived Pastor of the Church about Eighteen years, and was most intense and faithful in declaring much of the Counsel of God. He went through a great part of the Body of Divinity; made a very excellent *Exposition* of the Book of *Genesis*, and part of

Exodus;

Exodus, and delivered many fruitful and profitable Sermons on the four first Chapters of *John*; and in his *Monethly Lectures*, which were abundantly frequented, he Preached *of Mans Misery by Sin*, and *Recovery by Christ Jesus*; and died in the third part of it, *viz.* concerning *Mans Obedience in Christ*: besides many other excellent Truths by him taught upon divers occasions. In all his Labours God was wonderfully present with him. He was a person that held very near Communion with God; Eminent in Wisdome, Piety, Humility, Love, Self-denial, and of a compassionate and tender heart; surpassing in Publick-spiritedness; a mighty man in Prayer, and Eminent at standing in the Gap; he was zealous for Order, and faithful in asserting the Truth against all Oppugners of it. In a word, he was a man whom God had richly furnished, and eminently fitted for his Work; lived desired, and died lamented by all good Christians that knew him. It pleased God upon the Ninth of *July*, 1668. in a hot and burning season, (but much more hot in the Heat of Gods Anger to *New-England*) to take him to Rest and Glory, about the 43 year of his Age. His Race was but short, but the Work he did was very much. The *Elegies* following may give the Reader a further account of what esteem he was.

Upon the Death of that truely Godly, Reverend, and Faithful Servant of Christ, Mr. *Jonathan Mitchell*, Pastor of the Church at *Cambridge*, who deceased *July* 9. 1668.

WHat shall we say? Of sad Effects what fear?
Four Splendent Stars *extinguish'd in one year*:
Two Old, *one* Young, *and this of* Middle Age;
A brightest Light, *most eyes who did ingage*.
The Lord in's Temple is, Earth silence keep;
Dispute not over-bold this Judgement *deep*.
A Mourning great, each Eye distilling Streams;
Sad Sighs and Sobs in most men's mouthes their Theams:

And

And who can blame it? for this we well may,
If Love, *if* Fear, *if* Temple-ſhakes *bear ſway.*
The Wife *hath loſt her* Head; *four* hopeful Stems
A Father; Cambridge *too their* Crowning Gems;
Neighbours, *a* uſeful Light; Elders, *a* Brother,
Whoſe Head *and* Mouth *made him to moſt a* Father.
Sad Cambridge, *when thou loſt thy* Thomas *dear,*
God pitied thee, and gave a right Compeer;
This Jonathan *thy* Mitchell, *one in whom*
Was Much-of-EL, *a* Michael *judg'd by ſome.*
Right ſtrong in School, *in* Desk *of brighteſt ſhine;*
Artiſt, *good* Linguiſt, *high* Orthodox Divine;
Of Judgement *deep; of* Memory *how large!*
Invention *quick, grave, pleaſant; who can charge*
Thee in thy Theory *or* Practick *with dark fail?*
Humble, Sincere, *whoſe* Love-cords *did avail.*

Much good by him you Cambridge *have receiv'd:*
He gone, by you his Relicts *ſee reliev'd.*
A Royal Quære *'twas, when* Jonathan *dead,*
And Royal Act, Jonathan's *Stems to feed.*

E. B.

To the Memory of the Learned and Reverend, Mr. *Jonathan Mitchell*, late Miniſter of *Cambridge* in *N. E.* Inhumed *July* 10. 1668.

Quicquid agimus, quicquid Patimur venit ex Alto.

THe Countries Tears, be ye my Spring; *my* Hill
A general Grave; let Groans *inſpire my Quill*
With an Heart-rending Senſe, *drawn from the* Cries
Of Orphan Churches, *and the* Deſtinies
Of a Bereaved Houſe: *Let* Children *weep*
They ſcarce know why; and let the Mother *ſteep*

Her lifeleſs Hopes *in Brine*; *The* Private Friend
O'rewhelm'd with grief *falter his* Comforts *end.*
By a warm Sympathie *the* Feaverish Heat
Roams through my Verſe *unſeen*; *and a* Cold Sweat
Limning Deſpair, *attend me*; Sighs *diffuſe*
Convulſions *through my language, ſuch as uſe*
To type a Gaſping Fancy; *Laſtly ſhroud*
Religions Splendor *in a* Mourning Cloud,
Replete with Vengeance *for ſucceeding Times*
Fertile in Woes, *more fertile in their* Crimes.
Theſe are my Muſes; *Theſe inſpire the* Sails
Of Fancy *with their* Sighs *in ſtead of* Gales.
Reader, *reade Rev'rend* Mitchel's Life, *and then*
Confeſs the World a Gordian Knot *agen.*
Reade his Tear-delug'd Grave, *and then decree*
Our preſent Woe, *and* future Miſerie.
Stars falling *ſpeak a* Storm: *when* Samuel *dies,*
Saul *may expect* Philiſtia's *Cruelties.*
So when Jehovah's brighter Glory *fled*
The Temple, Iſrael *was Captive led.*
Geneva's *Triple Light made* one Divine;
But here that vaſt Triumvirate *combine*
By a bleſt Metempſycoſis, *to take*
One Perſon *for their larger* Zodiake.
In Sacred Cenſures, Farrels *dreadfull* Scroul
Of Words, *broke from the* Pulpit *to the* Soul.
[*Indulgent* Parents *when they* ſpare, *they* ſpoyle;
Old Wounds *need* Vinegar *as well as* Oyle:
Diſtaſtful Cates *with* Miſeries *do ſuit*;
The Paſchal Lamb *was eat with* bitter fruit.]
In Balmy Comforts, Virets *Genius came*
*From th'*wrinkled Alps *to woo the* Weſtern Dame;
And Courting Cambridge, *quickly took from thence*
Her laſt Degrees *of* Rhetorick *and* Senſe.
Calvin's *Laconicks through his* Doctrine *ſpred,*
And Children's Children *with their Manna fed.*

His

His Expoſition Geneſis *begun,*
And fatall Exodus *Eclips'd his* Sun.
Some ſay that Souls *oft ſad* Preſages *give*;
Death-breathing Sermons *taught us laſt to live.*
One ſowes another reaps, *may truely be*
Our Grave-Inſtruction, *and his* Elegie.
His Syſtem of Religion *half unheard,*
Full double in his Preaching Life *appear'd.*
Happy that place where Rulers Deeds *appear*
I'th' Front *o'th' Battel, and their* Words *i'th'* Rear.
He's gone, to whom his Country *owes a love*
Worthy the prudent Serpent, *and the* Dove.
Religion's Panoply, *the Sinners* Terrour,
Death ſummon'd hence ſure by a Writ of Errour.
The Quaker *trembling at his* Thunder, *fled*;
And with Caligula *reſum'd his Bed.*
He by the Motions of a Nobler Spirit
Clear'd Men, *and made their Notions* Swine inherit.
The Munſter *Goblin by his holy flood*
Exorcis'd, like a thin Phantaſma *ſtood.*
Brown's *Babel ſhatter'd by his* Lightning, *fell*;
And with Confuſed Horrour *pack'd to hell.*
The Scripture *with a* Commentary *bound*
(*Like a loſt* Calice) *in his* Heart *was found.*
When he was Sick, *the* Air *a* Feaver *took*,
And thirſty Phœbus *quaft the* Silver Brook;
When Dead, *the* Spheres *in* Thunder, Clouds *&* Rain
Groan'd his Elegium, *Mourn'd and Wept* our Pain.
Let not the Brazen Schiſmatick *aſpire*;
Lot's *leaving* Sodom, *left them to the* Fire.
'Tis true, the Bee's *now dead, but yet his* Sting
Death's to their Droniſh Doctrines *yet may bring.*

Epitaphium.

HEre lyes within this Comprehenſive Span,
The Churches, Courts, and Countries Jonathan.
He that ſpeaks Mitchell, *gives the Schools the* Lie;
Friendſhip in Him gain'd an Ubiquity.

Vivet poſt Funera Virtus. F. D.

An *Epitaph* upon the deplored Death of that Super-eminent Miniſter of the Goſpel, Mr. *Jonathan Mitchel.*

HEre lyes the Darling *of his time,*
Mitchell, *Expired in his prime;*
Who four years ſhort of Fourty ſeven
Was found full Ripe, and pluck'd for Heaven.
Was full of prudent Zeal, *and* Love,
Faith, Patience, Wiſdome *from above:*
New-England's *Stay, next* Ages *Story;*
The Churches *Gemme; the* Colledge *Glory.*
Angels *may ſpeak him; Ah! not I,*
(*Whoſe Worth's above* Hyperbole)
But for our Loſs, *wer't in my power,*
I'de weep an Everlaſting Shower.

J. S.

A fourth Miniſter that died this year, was Mr. *John Eliot* Junior, born at *Roxbury* in *New-England*, Eldeſt Son of the Reverend Mr. *John Eliot*, Teacher of the Church there. He was Educated (at *Cambridge*) in the Latine School, and in the Colledge, untill he became *Maſter of Arts*; and a few years after was called to be Paſtor of a Church within the Bounds of *Cambridge*, upon the South-ſide of *Charles River*. He was a perſon excellently endowed, and accompliſhed with Gifts of *Nature*,

Nature, *Learning*, and *Grace*; of comely Proportion, ruddy Complexion, chearful Countenance; of quick Apprehenſion, ſolid Judgement, excellent Prudence; Learned both in *Tongues* and *Arts* for one of his time, and ſtudiouſly intenſe in acquiring more knowledge. His Abilities and Acceptation in the Miniſtry did excell; His Piety, Faith, Love, Humility, Self-deniall, and Zeal, did eminently ſhine upon all occaſions. He had (under the conduct of his Father) by his diligence, induſtry, and zeal (for the good of Souls) attained to ſuch skill in the *Indian* Language, that he Preached to the *Indians* ſundry years; Travelling many miles in a day once a Fortnight to diſpenſe the Goſpel to them. The *Indians* have often ſaid, that *his Preaching to them was precious and deſireable*; and conſequently their loſs, and the obſtruction in that Work, much to be lamented. In a word, there was ſo much of God in him, that all the wiſe and godly who knew him, loved and honoured him in the Lord, and bewailed his death; which fell upon the 13 day of *October* 1668. and of his Age about 35 years.

I *Shall cloſe up this ſmall* Hiſtory *with a word of Advice to the* Riſing-generation, *That as now their godly Predeceſſors have had large Experience of the goodneſs and faithfulneſs of God, for the ſpace of near Fourty ſix years (ſome of them) and have paſſed under various Diſpenſations, ſometimes under great* Afflictions, *other-while* the Sun ſhining upon their Tabernacles *in wayes of* peace *and* proſperity, *and yet notwithſtanding, through the grace of Chriſt, the moſt of them have held their integrity in his Wayes: That ſo, ſuch as ſucceed them would follow their Examples, ſo farre as they have followed Chriſt; that it might not be ſaid of them, as it is to be feared it may be, by what yet appears amongſt many of them, That indeed* God did once plant a Noble vine in *New-England*, but it is degenerated into the plant of a ſtrange vine. *It were well* Jerem. 2 21.

that it might be ſaid, that the Riſing-generation did ſerve
Joſh. 24.31. the Lord all the dayes of *ſuch as in this our* Iſrael *are as* Joſhua's *amongſt us*, and the Elders that over-lived him, which have known all the works of the Lord which he hath done for their Fathers. *But if yet notwithſtanding afterwards ſuch ſhall forget, and not regard thoſe his* great Works *here preſented before them (beſides many more that I hope by ſome others may come to their view) be they aſſured,*
Pſal. 28.5. He will deſtroy them, and not build them up. *Oh therefore, let the truely godly in this Land be incited by the example of* Moſes, *as the mouth of the Church, to pray earneſtly and inceſſantly unto the Lord,* That his work may yet
Pſal. 90.16. appear to his ſervants, and his glory unto their children;
Iſai. 44. 3,4. *and,* that he would pour out his Spirit upon *his Church and* people *in New-England*, and his bleſſing upon their offspring, that they may ſpring up as among the graſs, and as the willows by the water-courſes; *That ſo great occaſion there may be thereby of taking notice thereof in ſucceeding generations, to the praiſe and glory of* GOD. So be it.

FINIS.

A Brief Chronological Table,

Of the principall PASSAGES contained in *New Englands* Memoriall.

In the Year of Christ 1610.

SUndry godly Christians of the *English* Nation remove out of the North of *England* into the *Netherlands*, and gathered a Church at *Leyden*, where they continued untill the year 1620. *Page* 1,2

1620.

For several Reasons the *English* conclude on a removal from thence into *America*, *pag.*2,3,4

Letters-Patents were obtained from King *James* of Famous Memory for the Northern parts of *Virginia*, *p.* 5

July 2. sundry of the *English* set Sail from *Holland* for *Southhampton*. At their departure Mr. *John Robinson* Pastor of the *English* Church at *Leyden* writes them a parting Letter, *p.*6,*&c.*

August 5. they set Sail from *Southampton* for *America*: Many discouragements hapned on the Voyage, *p.*10,11

November 11. they Arrived at *Cape Cod*, *p.*12

And there they entred into a Body-Politick, *p.*14

And Chose Mr. *John Carver* their Governour for the present year, *p.*16

Discovery is made for a fit place for Habitation, *ibid.*

In the Discovery the *English* are assaulted by the Barbarous Natives, *p.*19

A place

A place discovered, and there they setled, which was called *New-Plimouth*, p. 21, 22

In *January* and *February* was a Mortality amongst the *English*, which swept away about half the Company, p. 22

Several Articles of Peace were drawn up betwixt the *English* and the great *Indian* Sachem *Massasoict*, willingly submitting himself and his People to become the Loyal Subjects of the Kings of *England*, p. 24

A certain *Indian* named *Squanto*, who had formerly been in *England*, became the *Indian* Interpreter for the *English*, and proved an Instrument of much good to the first Planters, p. 25

1621.

Several *Indian Sachems* willingly submitted themselves to the Government of *New-Plimouth*, and voluntarily acknowledged themselves and their People to be the Loyal Subjects of the Kings of *England*, p. 29

Indian Grain planted, and *English* Grain sowed by the *English* this year, but with little success. In *April* Mr. *John Carver* Governour of *Plimouth* died, his Wife not succeeding him above six weeks, p. 30, 31

Mr. *William Bradford* was Chosen Governour in his stead. Mr. *Edward Winslow* and Mr. *Stephen Hopkins* give the great Sachem *Massasoiet* a Visit, p. 31

The *English* view the *Massachusets Bay*, being courteously entertained by the *Indians* the Natives thereof, p. 32

In *November* one Mr. *Robert Cushman* arrived at *New-Plimouth*, who brought over 35 Passengers, p. 33

The *Narrhaganset Indians* send the *English* a Challenge, which the *English* answer with another, but they would not accept of it, *ibid.*

1622.

The *English* hold Correspondency with the *Indians* of the *Massachusets Bay* by trading with them, p. 34

By reason of daily rumours of the *Indians* Insurrection, the *English* build them a strong Fort, in which were several great

great Pieces of Ordnance mounted, *p.*37
A great Drought hapned this ſummer, from *May* 3. until the middle of *July* there was no Rain, ſo that the Corn began to wither away, but the Lord remarkably anſwered the Prayers of his people even to admiration, *p.*37,38
A remarkable Providence of God, tending to the relief of the firſt Planters being in great extremity, *p.*39
Here arrived three Ships from one Mr. *Thomas Weſton* Merchant, with 67 luſty men, who ſeated themſelves in in a part of the *Maſſachuſets Bay*, now called *Weymouth*, *p.*35,36
Weſtons unruly Company fall into great wants, *p.*40

1623.

The *Indians*, by reaſon of *Weſtons* diſorderly Company, ſtealing away their Corn, *&c.* carry it very inſultingly over them, and enter into a Conſpiracy to cut off the *Engliſh*; which Conſpiracy being occaſionally diſcover'd by the Sachem *Maſſaſoiet*, was prevented by the *Engliſh*, *p.*41, *&c.*
Weſtons Plantation wholly ruinated, *p.*43
Mr. *John Pierce* in his Voyage to *New-England*, was by reaſon of leaks and great ſtorms twice driven back to *England*, in whoſe ſhip was 109 perſons, *p.*45,46
In *June* one Capt. *Francis Weſt*, who had Commiſſion to be Admiral of *N.E.* arrived at *Plimouth*, but by reaſon of diſcouragements he quickly left the Country, *p.*47
Two ſhips, the *Anne* and *James*, arrive in *Plimouth*, *p.*47,48
Capt. *Robert Gorges* arrives in *Plimouth*, begins a ſecond Plantation of the *Maſſachuſets* Bay, which quickly brake in pieces. Capt. *Robert Gorges* had Commiſſion from the Council of *N.E.* to be the General Governour of the Country; he brought over with him a Miniſter, on Mr. *Morrel*, that had a Superintendent Authority over other Churches granted him: but they both being diſcouraged, quickly returned home to *England*, *p.*49 *to* 52
A Fire which did conſiderable damage at *Plimouth*. Several of the Inhabitants through diſcontent and caſualties, remove into *Virginia*, *p.*51

1624.

The Number of Magistrates increased to 5 at *Plimouth*, p.53
The first Neat Cattel brought into the Country, *ibid.*
Lyford and *Oldham*, for their treacherous undermining the Government of *Plimouth*, and setting up a Schismatical Church, are both Banished that Jurisdiction, p.53, *&c.*

1625.

Remarkable Judgements of God upon those two *Machavilians* *Lyford* and *Oldham*, p.59, *&c.*
Many of the *Merchant-Adventurers* prove open Adversaries to the Plantation of *Plimouth*, p.61
A remarkable Providence of God on the *Merchant-Adventurers*, p.62
Successful Trading with the *Indians* of *Kenebek*, p.61
Capt. *Miles Standish* goes over to *England* as an Agent in the behalf of the Plantation of *New-Plimouth*, p.62

1626.

In *April* Capt. *Standish* arrives in *Plimouth*, brings sad tidings of Mr. *John Robinsons*, and Mr. *Robert Cushmans* death, p.63
They receive divers Letters from their friends in *Holland*, p.64

1627.

Mr. *Isaac Allerton* goes over for *England* Agent for the Plantation with the *Merchant-Adventurers*, p.64
The first distribution of Land amongst the Inhabitants of *Plimouth*, p.65
A ship with many Passengers in her, bound for *Virginia*, was cast away at the middle of *Mannamoiet* Bay, but they saved their lives and their goods, and were courteously entertained at *Plimouth*, p.65, *&c.*
The *Dutch* Plantation desire Commerce with *Plimouth*, which they grant them, and so they held mutual and profitable correspondency together. The *Dutch* acquaint the *English* with the trading of *Wampam-peag*, p.67

1628.

Morton for his Atheistical and licentious Practises, is apprehended by Capt. *Standish*, & sent home to *England*, p.68, *&c.*

Mr.

Mr. *John Endicot* arrives, bringing with him a Patent under the Broad-Seal of *England*, for the Government of the *Maſſachuſets*, p.70

1629.

Three ſhips arrive at *Salem*, bringing a great number of Paſſengers from *England:* Infectious diſeaſes amongſt them, p.73
Mr. *Higginſon*, Mr. *Skelton*, Mr. *Bright*, Miniſters, arrive, p.74
Upon *Aug.* 5. was the firſt Church in the *Maſſachuſets* Colony gathered, *viz.* at *Salem*, p.75
The Book of Common-Prayer pleaded for, and practiſed in *Maſſachuſets* Colony by two of the Patentees, p.76
But was quickly prohibited by the Authority there, p.77

1630.

Mr. *Higginſon* Teacher of *Salem* Church died, p.78
A Fleet of ten ſhips arrived in the *Maſſachuſets* Colony, in which came over many worthy Inſtruments, Mr. *John Winthrop*, and Mr. *Thomas Dudly* Magiſtrates; Mr. *Iſaac Johnſon* Eſq; and Mr. *John Wilſon*, Mr. *George Philips*, Mr. *Maverick* and Mr. *Wareham*, Miniſters, arrived. Mr. *Iſaac Johnſon* Magiſtrate of the *Maſſachuſets*, and his Lady, ſoon after their arrival, died, p.83
Churches gathered this year at *Boſton*, by *Mr. John Wilſon*, *Watertown*, by *Mr. Philips*, *Dorcheſter*, by *Mr. Maverick* and *Mr. Wareham*, p. 84

1631. A Church gathered at *Roxbury* by *Mr. John Eliot* and *Mr. Weld*, p.85

1632.

Sir *Chriſtopher Gardiner* (a ſtrong Papiſt) arrived in *N.E.* who for ſome miſcarriages left the Country, and returned home to *England*, and there proved an open Adverſary to the Country, p.85,86
The Lords of the Kings moſt honourable Privy-Council favour the Plantations of *N.E.* by their encouraging Order, p.87,88

1633.

The number of *Magiſtrates* at *Plimouth* increaſed to ſeven, p.89

An infectious Feaver amongſt the Inhabitants of *Plimouth*, whereof many died, *p.*90
Great ſwarms of ſtrange Flies up and down the Country, which was a preſage of the following mortality, *p.*91
Mr. *John Cotton*, Mr. *Hooker*, and Mr. *Stone*, Miniſters, arrive in *N. E.* *ibid.*
Mr. *William Collier*, a liberal Benefactor to the Colony of *New-Plimouth*, arrives in *N.E.* *ibid.*

1634.

Mr. *Skelton* Paſtor to the Church at *Salem* died, *p.*78
A great mortality amongſt the *Indians* by the Small Pox, *p.*92
Capt. *Stone* turns Pirat at the *Dutch* Plantation, and there ſeizes on a *Plimouth* Barque that was there trading, *p.*93
The cruel *Maſſacre* of Capt. *Stone* and Capt. *Norton* at *Conecticot River* by the *Pequot Indians*, *p.*92,93
Mr. *Roger Williams* lamentable Apoſtacy, *p.*78, *&c.*
He is Baniſhed by the *Maſſachuſets* Colony, *ibid.*

1635.

Mr. *Edward Winſlow* ſent over to *England* as a publick Agent for the Country, *p.*94
An *Hirracane* which did great damage both by ſea & land, *p.*95

1636.

Conecticot Colony planted this year by many worthy Inſtruments. Two ſhallops loaden with goods were caſt away in the mouth of *Plimouth* Harbour, the goods were ſaved, ten men drowned, *p.*96
Mr. *John Oldham* murthered in his Barque by the *Indians* of *Block-Iſland*, *p.*98

1637.

The *Pequot* Wars; in which War the *Engliſh* ſlew and took Priſoners about 700 *Indians*, and ſlew 13 *Sachems*, to the great terrour of all the Natives, *p.*99
New-Haven Colony began this year, *p.*106
Antinomian and *Familiſtical* Errours are broach'd in the Country, eſpecially at *Boſton*, *ibid.*
A Synod is called, which condemned theſe Errours out of the Word

Word of God, *p.* 107
Mrs. Hutchinson and Errours are baniſhed by the *Magiſtrates* of the *Maſſachuſets* Colony, *ibid.*
A hideous *Monſter* born at *Boſton* of one *Mrs. Mary Dyer*, *p.* 108

1638.

Three *Engliſh-men* were put to death at *Plimouth* for robbing and murthering an *Indian* near *Providence*, *p.* 111
June 2. a great and fearful Earthquake in the Country, *ibid.*
Gorton, a peſtilent Seducer, and blaſphemous Atheiſt, is baniſhed *Plimouth* Colony, Whipt and baniſhed from *Road-Iſland*, baniſhed the *Maſſachuſets* Colony, *p.* 108, *&c.*

1639.

Harvard Colledge founded at *Cambridge* by Mr. *John Harvard* of worthy memory, *p.* 112
Articles of Peace renewed with *Maſſaſoict* Sachem, and his Son *Mooanam*, by the Government of *Plimouth*, *p.* 112, *&c.*

1642.

Thirteen able godly Miniſters at this time in *Plimouth* Juriſdiction, ſhined as bright Stars in the Churches Firmament, *p.* 116

1643.

Mr. *William Brewſter*, Ruling-Elder in the Church of *Plimouth* died in the 84 year of his Age, *p.* 117
May 19. was the firſt Combination of the four United Colonies of *N. E.* *p.* 120

1644.

Mr. *John Atwood*, an eminent Benefactor to the Colony of *Plimouth*, died, *p.* 121
The Town of *Eaſtham* erected by divers conſiderable perſons of *Plimouth*, *ibid.*

1646.

Three men of War arrived in *Plimouth* Harbour under the command of Capt. *Tho: Cromwel*, richly laden. A mutiny amongſt the Seamen, whereby one man is killed, *p.* 123
Mr. *Edw Winſlow* goes over into *England* Agent for the *Maſſachuſets Colony*, to anſwer the complaints of ſundry diſcontented perſons, but returned no more to *N. E.* *p.* 124

1647.

Mr. *Thomas Hooker*, Paſtor of the Church at *Hartford*, reſted from his labours, *p.*125

1649.

March 26. Mr. *John Winthrop* Governour of the *Maſſachuſets* deceaſed, *p.*130

An innumerable company of Caterpillers in ſome parts of the Country deſtroyed the Fruits of the Earth, *p.*131

Auguſt 25. Mr. *Thomas Shepard* Paſtor of *Cambridge* Church died, *ibid.*

An Act of Parliament paſſed in *England* for *promoting and propagating the Goſpel amongſt the Indians in* N.E. In reference to which, an *Indian Corporation* was there eſtabliſhed. Able Inſtruments encouraged to preach the Goſpel to the *Indians* in *N.E.* the Bible was tranſlated into the *Indian* Language by Mr. *John Elict*, and (in 1664.) was printed at *Cambridge*, *p.*131

1650.

A great mortality amongſt Children this year, *p.*133

1651.

Mr. *Wil: Thomas* Magiſtrate of *Plimouth* Colony died, *p.*134

1652.

Mr. *John Cotton* Teacher of *Boſton* Church died. A Comet was ſeen at the time of his ſickneſs hanging over *N. E.* which went out ſoon after his death, *p.*135, *&c.*

1653.

July 31. Mr. *Thomas Dudly* Governour of the *Maſſachuſets* died, about the 77 year of his Age, *p.*139

1655.

Plimouth hears ſad news of the death of Mr. *Edward Winſlow*, who had ſometimes been their Governour, *p.*142

1656.

Capt. *Miles Standiſh* Magiſtrate of *Plimouth* died, *p.*143

1657.

May 3. Mr. *William Bradford* Governor of *Plimouth* died, *p.*144

The Quakers (that curſed Sect) arrive at *Plimouth*, *p.*151

Mr. *Theoph: Eaton* Governor of *Newhaven* Colony died, *p.* 152

Mr.

Mr. *Garret* caſt away in his Voyage from *Boſton* to *England*, which was a great loſs to the Country, p.152

1658.

A great Earthquake was heard in *N.E.* p.153
Mr. *Ralph Partridge* Miniſter at *Duxbury* deceaſed, *ibid.*
John Philips of *Marſhfield* ſlain by Thunder & Lightning, p.155
Mr. *William Paddy* Deacon of *Plimouth* Church died, *ibid.*

1659.

The damnable Opinions of the Quakers are vented up and down the Country, p.157
Mr. *Henry Dunſter*, firſt Preſident of *Harvard* Colledge, deceaſed, p.158

1660.

James Pierce ſlain by Lightning at *Plimouth*, p.159

1662.

In *January* ſeveral Earthquakes were heard in *N.E.* p.161
Philip Sachem of *Pokanaket* renews the Articles of Peace made betwixt the Government of *Plimouth*, and his Father & Brother, p.160
Mr. *John Brown* Magiſtrate of *Plimouth* Colony ended this life, p.163,164

1663.

Mr. *Samuel Newman* Teacher of *Rehoboth* died, p.164
Mr. *John Norton* Teacher of *Boſton* died ſuddenly, p.165
Mr. *Samuel Stone* Teacher of *Hartford* deceaſed, p.168

1664.

A great and dreadful Comet appeared in *New-England* for the ſpace of three moneths, which was accompanied with many ſad Effects, p.170
Great mildew and blaſting in the Country, p.172
The Kings Commiſſioners arrived at *Boſton* in *N.E.* p.173
Manado's ſurrendred up to His Majeſty, and called *New-York*, p.173
Colonel *Cartwright* on his Voyage to *England* was taken by the *Dutch*. Sir *Robert Carre* died the next day after his arrival in *Briſtol*, p.176

1665.

1665.

Mr. *John Endicot* Governour of the *Massachusetts*, died, *p.*176
Capt. *Davenport* killed with Lightning as he lay on his Bed at the Castle, *p.*177
Wheat exceedingly blasted and mildewed, *ibid.*

1666.

Three killed in a moment by a blow of Thunder at *Marshfield*, and four at *Piscataqua*, and divers hurt. A great Whirlwind at the same time, *p.*178
The Small Pox at *Boston*, *p.*179
The mildew and blasting of the Corn still continued, *ibid.*
A remarkable manifestation of Gods goodness to some poor Salvages in the Jurisdiction of *Plimouth*, *p.*180
The death of Mr. *William Thompson* Minister at *Braintry*, 181

1667.

Several Vollies of shot heard discharged in the Air at *Nantasket*. In *March* there appeared a Sign in the Heavens in the form of a Spear, pointing directly to the West, *p.*182
Mr. *John Wilson*, who had been Pastor of *Boston* Church 37 years, rested from his labours in the 79 year of his Age, *p.*183

1668.

Mr. *Samuel Shepard* Pastor of *Rowley* Church died, *p.*190
April 27. Mr. *Henry Flint*, Teacher at *Braintry*, died, *ibid.*
July 9. Mr. *Jonathan Mitchel*, Pastor of the Church at *Cambridge*, deceased, *p.*190, *&c.*
October 13. Mr. *John Eliot* junior, Pastor of a Church within the Bounds of *Cambridge*, departed this life, *p.*196, 197
The *Conclusion* of the History, with Advice to the Rising generation, *p.*197, 198

FINIS.